

1969

# A general equilibrium study of the monetary mechanism

David Louis Schulze  
*Iowa State University*

Follow this and additional works at: <https://lib.dr.iastate.edu/rtd>



Part of the [Economic Theory Commons](#)

---

## Recommended Citation

Schulze, David Louis, "A general equilibrium study of the monetary mechanism " (1969). *Retrospective Theses and Dissertations*. 4150.  
<https://lib.dr.iastate.edu/rtd/4150>

This Dissertation is brought to you for free and open access by the Iowa State University Capstones, Theses and Dissertations at Iowa State University Digital Repository. It has been accepted for inclusion in Retrospective Theses and Dissertations by an authorized administrator of Iowa State University Digital Repository. For more information, please contact [digirep@iastate.edu](mailto:digirep@iastate.edu).

70-13,630

SCHULZE, David Louis, 1939-  
A GENERAL EQUILIBRIUM STUDY OF THE MONETARY  
MECHANISM.

Iowa State University, Ph.D., 1969  
Economics, theory

University Microfilms, Inc., Ann Arbor, Michigan

A GENERAL EQUILIBRIUM STUDY OF THE MONETARY MECHANISM

by

David Louis Schulze

A Dissertation Submitted to the  
Graduate Faculty in Partial Fulfillment of  
The Requirements for the Degree of  
DOCTOR OF PHILOSOPHY

Major Subject: Economics

Approved:

Signature was redacted for privacy.

In Charge of Major Work

Signature was redacted for privacy.

Head of Major Department

Signature was redacted for privacy.

Dean of Graduate College

Iowa State University  
Of Science and Technology  
Ames, Iowa

1969

## TABLE OF CONTENTS

|  | Page |
|--|------|
| CHAPTER I. INTRODUCTION AND REVIEW OF THE LITERATURE | 1    |
| Introduction   | 1    |
| Review of the Literature                             | 2    |
| CHAPTER II. THE MODEL                                | 15   |
| Introduction   | 15   |
| Production, Investment and Growth                    | 15   |
| Production   | 16   |
| Growth and investment                                | 19   |
| The labor market                                     | 25   |
| Production equilibrium and full employment           | 27   |
| The Manufacturing Sector (The Firms)                 | 28   |
| The Government Sector                                | 37   |
| Taxes and government spending                        | 38   |
| Government securities and monetary affairs           | 39   |
| The Banking Sector                                   | 42   |
| Time and demand deposits                             | 42   |
| Loans, reserves and rediscounting                    | 45   |
| The Nonbank Financial Sector (The Intermediaries)    | 58   |
| The Public Sector                                    | 63   |
| The Markets  | 65   |
| Currency market                                      | 65   |
| The market for demand deposits                       | 68   |
| The market for time deposits                         | 69   |

|  | Page |
|--|------|
| The market for government securities   | 70   |
| The market for bank loans  | 72   |
| The market for intermediary loans  | 75   |
| The market for the capital good  | 75   |
| The market for firms' securities   | 75   |
| A note on aggregate demands  | 77   |
| Relations of the Model   | 78   |
| Production, investment and growth  | 78   |
| The firms  | 79   |
| The government   | 81   |
| The banking sector   | 81   |
| The intermediaries   | 83   |
| The public sector  | 84   |
| CHAPTER III. SOLUTION WITH A PASSIVE GOVERNMENT  | 86   |
| An Expression for the Money Stock  | 86   |
| Solution with M as the Dependent Variable  | 88   |
| Solution with M as the Independent Variable  | 96   |
| The "Solution"   | 99   |
| A Word on Full Employment and Equilibrium  | 118  |
| CHAPTER IV. SOLUTION WITH AN ACTIVE GOVERNMENT   | 120  |
| Changes in Reserve Requirements  | 120  |
| Changes in the Rediscount Rate   | 142  |
| Open Market Operations   | 146  |
| Summary and Conclusions--The Effects and<br>Effectiveness of the Tools of Monetary<br>Policy | 160  |

|                                       | Page |
|---------------------------------------|------|
| CHAPTER V. CONCLUSIONS                | 174  |
| The Monetary Mechanism                | 174  |
| The Tools of Monetary Policy          | 177  |
| Suggested Empirical Testing Procedure | 179  |
| ACKNOWLEDGEMENTS                      | 181  |
| BIBLIOGRAPHY                          | 182  |
| APPENDIX                              | 186  |

## CHAPTER I. INTRODUCTION AND REVIEW OF THE LITERATURE

## Introduction

The classical dichotomy between the real and monetary variables in the economy is, in one form or another, an extremely hardy beast. One of its milder reincarnations is the idea that an examination of the determinants of the stock of money is, at best, only an intellectual game since the chain of causality runs from income and prices to the money stock. The demand for money is visualized as primarily a function of the level of national income and any correlation between income and prices and money is due solely to the "pull" of income on the money stock.<sup>1</sup> No important feedback from the money stock to income and prices are believed to exist.

With the great deal of work done in the 1950's and early 1960's providing a convincing theoretical basis for the existence of a chain of causality running from the money stock to the real variables in the economy<sup>2</sup> (not to mention Keynes' work (31, 32)), economists began, in the early 1960's, to investigate more thoroughly the determination of the money stock. The forces affecting the money stock were important since the money stock in turn affected the level of prices and income.

The primary purpose of this work is to examine the processes through which the money stock is determined. In addition, we will provide further

---

<sup>1</sup>See for example, Goldsmith (26), Klein, L. and Goldberger, A. (33).

<sup>2</sup>Patinkin's, Money, Interest, and Prices (47), served as both a milestone and a stimulus for further work in this area.

theoretical support for the position that changes in the stock of money affects the level of economic activity, and will examine the effects and effectiveness of the various tools of monetary policy. The framework in which this will be carried out is a general equilibrium model of the economy composed of five sectors--the public, manufacturing firms, banks, nonbank financial firms, and the government.

### Review of the Literature

This work is primarily an extension of what is commonly referred to as "money supply theory." The basic idea of the approaches to be discussed is to generate expressions for the stock of money in terms of the variables of whatever economic model is postulated and to derive statements about the effects of changes in these variables on the stock of money. These expressions for the money stock are called money supply equations.<sup>1</sup>

The study of the supply of money began with the early work of C. A. Phillips (48) and others (1, 35, 39, 50) in the 1920's and 1930's. Their work culminated in the standard textbook money multipliers like  $\Delta M = (\frac{1}{r})$  times the original change in the money stock (where  $r$  is the average reserve requirement) with which we are so familiar. No real

---

<sup>1</sup>They are not supply equations in the normal sense of the term, since they all purport to give the actual stock of money when the values of their parameters are known. If they were true supply equations, the actual stock of money would be given, not by the "supply" equation alone, but by simultaneous solution of the aggregate demand for money equation and a "true" supply equation. For this reason, we choose to speak of the monetary mechanism implying a simultaneous determination of the money stock, rather than the supply of money alone.



advance in this area occurred until the 1960's and the work of Milton Friedman and Anna Schwartz (24), Phillip Cagan (10), and Karl Brunner and Alan Meltzer (4, 5, 6, 8, 41). The Friedman-Schwartz-Cagan approach and the Brunner-Meltzer approaches to the money supply are the best known today and are described in detail below.

The Friedman-Schwartz-Cagan<sup>1</sup> approach is based on two simple definitions. The money stock, M, is equal to total currency holdings, C, and total demand deposits.

$$M = C + D \quad (1.2-1)$$

High powered money, H, defined as the total of all types of money that can be used as currency or reserves is simply

$$H = C + R \quad (1.2-2)$$

where R is simply reserves.

The basic Friedman-Schwartz-Cagan result is obtained by simply dividing Equation 1.2-1 by Equation 1.2-2 which yields, after a few simple algebraic manipulations,<sup>2</sup>

---

<sup>1</sup>Cagan's tautology for the money stock is slightly different from that presented in Appendix B to A Monetary History of the U. S., 1867-1960 by Friedman and Schwartz (24). Cagan's formulation is based on the tautology derived by Friedman and Schwartz described in the text.

<sup>2</sup>The derivation of Equation 1.2-3 is: (1)  $\frac{M}{H} = \frac{C+D}{C+R}$ . Multiplying numerator and denominator by D yields (2)  $\frac{M}{H} = \frac{DC+D^2}{DC+RD}$ . Then the right hand side of 2 is multiplied by  $\frac{RC}{RC}$ , yielding

$$\frac{M}{H} = \frac{\frac{DC+D^2}{RC}}{\frac{DC+RD}{RC}} = \frac{\frac{DC}{RC} + \frac{D^2}{RC}}{\frac{DC}{RC} + \frac{RD}{RC}} = \frac{\frac{D}{R} + \frac{D^2}{RC}}{\frac{D}{R} + \frac{D}{C}} = \frac{\frac{D}{R} (1 + \frac{D}{C})}{\frac{D}{R} + \frac{D}{C}}.$$

Multiplying both sides by H gives the desired result.

$$M = H \frac{D/R (1 + D/C)}{D/R + D/C} . \quad (1.2-3)$$

Equation 1.2-3 is a tautology, being derived from the definitions of M and H. In this approach the money stock is determined by the decisions of three sectors: the government who determines H; the public by determining their deposit to currency ratio, D/C; and the banks by determining the deposit to reserve ratio, D/R. Friedman and Schwartz call H, D/R, and D/C the "proximate determinants" of the money stock.<sup>1</sup> The factors underlying these proximate determinants are spelled out only vaguely. D/C is said to depend upon the "relative usefulness" of deposits and currency, the costs of holding these assets, and "perhaps income."<sup>2</sup> D/R is a function of legal reserve requirements and precautionary reserves.<sup>3</sup> The determinants of H are not spelled out specifically, even though a large portion of their book is devoted to describing and analyzing various actions by the monetary authorities.

Brunner and Meltzer actually present two hypotheses--a linear and a nonlinear hypothesis. Their linear hypothesis is based on the reaction of the banking system to the presence of surplus reserves, defined as the difference between actual and desired reserves, the portfolio adjustments caused by these surplus reserves, (4, 8), and the process by which surplus reserves are generated or absorbed.

---

<sup>1</sup>Friedman and Schwartz, op.cit., p. 791.

<sup>2</sup>Ibid., p. 787.

<sup>3</sup>Ibid., p. 785.

The total portfolio response of the banking system to the presence of surplus reserves is given by

$$dE = \frac{1}{\lambda - \mu} S \quad (1.2-4)$$

where E is the value of the banks portfolio, S is the amount of surplus reserves, and  $\lambda$  is the average loss coefficient (e.g.,  $\lambda$  measures the amount of surplus reserves lost per dollar of portfolio adjustment).

$\lambda$  is less than one since the banking system will generate added deposits (and thus reserves) as it attempts to eliminate surplus reserves by buying interest bearing assets.  $\mu$  is equal to  $(1-n)p$  where p is the average spillover of deposits from the expanding bank (the one trying to eliminate surplus reserves) to other banks and n is a linear combination of average spillover into currency and time deposits. Thus  $\mu$  reduces the average loss coefficient and the term  $(\lambda - \mu)^{-1}$  is Brunner and Meltzer's money multiplier for responses to surplus reserves. Surplus reserves are given by the relation

$$S = A_0 dB + dL - A_1 dC_0 + A_2 dt_0 + A_3 dE - dV_0^d \quad (1.2-5)$$

where B is the monetary base (the amount of money issued by the government); L is the total of changes in required reserves resulting from changes in the average reserve requirement and from the redistribution of deposits between various classes of banks; E is a parameter measuring the structure of interbank deposits;  $dC_0$  represents changes in the public's demand for currency occurring independently of changes in the public's monetary wealth;  $dt_0$  represents changes in the public's demand for time deposits occurring independently of the public's wealth; and  $dV_0$  represents changes in the banks' demand for cash assets in excess of required

reserves occurring independently of changes in the level of banks' deposits. The  $A_i$  are positive constants. Then the change in  $M^2$  (defined as currency plus demand deposits plus time deposits) is given by

$$dM^2 = m^2 s + q dB \quad (1.2-6)$$

where  $m^2$  is the surplus reserve (or money) multiplier and  $q$  is the proportion of a change in the money base that affects bank reserves and deposits simultaneously.

The change in  $M^1$  ( $M^2 - T$ ) is

$$dM^1 = m^1 s + q dB - dt_0 \quad (1.2-7)$$

where  $m^1$  is the money multiplier for the definition of  $M$  excluding time deposits.

Replacing  $s$  in Equation 1.2-6 and Equation 1.2-7 with Equation 1.2-5 and integrating yields the linear hypothesis' expressions for  $M^1$  and  $M^2$ :

$$M^2 = m_0 + m^2(B+L) - m^2 A_1 C_0 + m^2 A_2 t_0 - m^2 V_0^d(i) \quad (1.2-8)$$

$$M^1 = n_0 + m^1(B+L) - m^1 A_1 C_0 - [1 - m^1 A_2] t_0 - m^1 V_0^d(i) \quad (1.2-9)$$

where  $B+L$  is the "extended monetary base,"  $m_0$  and  $n_0$  are positive constants, and the notation  $V_0^d(i)$  is used to express the dependence of the money stock on interest rates through the impact of interest rates on the banks' asset portfolio.  $m^1$  and  $m^2$  are the money multipliers.

Behind the terms  $C_0$ ,  $t_0$  and  $V_0$  lie the public's demands for currency and time deposits which depend upon the public's money wealth, nonmoney wealth, and all interest rates as well as the banks' demand for "available cash assets" which depends on the relevant interest rates and the level of deposit liabilities.

Again the money stock depends upon the decision of three sectors: the government in determining  $B+L$ , the public in determining  $C_0$  and  $t_0$  and the banking system in determining  $V_0(i)$ . Implicit in this hypothesis is the assumption, as Fand has pointed out,<sup>1</sup> that the marginal propensities to hold time and demand deposits (with respect to changes in  $M$ ) are constant.

Brunner and Meltzer's nonlinear hypothesis centers on the credit market. The money stock and interest rates emerge from the interaction of the public's supply of assets to the banks and the banks' resulting portfolio readjustment.

The bank's desired rate of portfolio readjustment,  $E^s$ , is given by

$$E^s = h (R - R^d) \quad (1.2-10)$$

where  $R$  is actual reserves and  $R^d$  is desired reserves.

$$R^d = R^d (D, T, i, \rho) \quad (1.2-11)$$

where  $i$  is a vector of all interest rates and  $\rho$  is the discount rate.

Excess reserves,  $R^e$ , are given by

$$R^e = R^e (i, \rho, D+T). \quad (1.2-12)$$

$R^e$  is assumed to be homogeneous of degree one in  $D+T$  so that we can write

$$R^e = e (i, \rho) (D+T) \quad (1.2-13)$$

the public's rate of supply of assets to the bank,  $E^d$ , is given by

$$E^d = f (i, W, E^d) \quad (1.2-14)$$

where  $W$  is the public's wealth and  $E^d$  the public's desired portfolio

---

<sup>1</sup>Fand, David I., Some Implications of Money Supply Analysis (19).

of liabilities to the banks. The public's desired rate of change in currency holdings and time deposits are given by:

$$\overset{0}{C^P} = q^1 (kD - C^P) \quad (1.2-15)$$

$$\overset{0}{T} = q^2 (tD - T) \quad (1.2-16)$$

where  $k$  is the desired currency to demand deposit ratio,  $t$  is the desired time deposit to demand deposit ratio, and  $D$  is the level of demand deposits.

The banks desired rate of change of indebtedness to the Fed is

$$\overset{0}{A} = a [b (D+T) - A] \quad (1.2-17)$$

where  $b$  is the desired indebtedness ratio.

Based on the above, Brunner and Meltzer write:

$$B = A + B^a \quad (1.2-18)$$

$$B = R + C \quad (1.2-19)$$

$$R = (r + e) (D + T) \quad (1.2-20)$$

$$C^P = kD \quad (1.2-21)$$

$$T = tD \quad (1.2-22)$$

$$A = b(D + T) \quad (1.2-23)$$

$$E = E (i, W) \quad (1.2-24)$$

where  $B^a$  in the adjusted or "relatively exogenous" base and all other symbols have been previously defined. This system of seven equations is then reduced to two through substitution and with the help of the assumption that  $B^a$  and  $W$  are given exogenously. These equations are:

$$M^2 = m^2 B^a \quad (1.2-25)$$

$$(m^2 - 1) B^a = E (i, W) \quad (1.2-26)$$

where  $m^2$ , the money multiplier, is given by

$$m^2 = \frac{1 + k + t}{(r + e - b)(1 + t) + k} . \quad (1.2-27)$$

From Equation 1.2-26 one of the rates of interest, say  $i^1$  (using their notation) can be determined in terms of the rest of the interest rates,  $\rho$ ,  $W$ ,  $B^a$ ,  $r$ , and  $k$ . Then this solution for  $i^1$  can be substituted into 1.2-25,<sup>1</sup> giving  $M^2$  as a function of interest rates  $i^s$  ( $s \neq 1$ ),  $\rho$ ,  $B^a$ ,  $r$ , and  $W$ . In other words, the solution to their two equations yields  $M^2$  and one rate of interest,  $i^1$ . Equations 1.2-25 through 1.2-26 are the expression of the nonlinear hypothesis.

Of the many other works that might be mentioned briefly,<sup>2</sup> we shall concentrate on the models of Ronald L. Teigen (51) and Frank de Leeuw (16).

The Teigen model is based on the proposition that the total level of reserves in the Federal Reserve System, various rules (such as the reserve requirements), and regular behavioral relations (between currency levels and the total money stock, etc.) "determine a maximum attainable money stock at any given time, and that this quantity ( $M^{**}$ ) can be considered to be the sum of two parts: one part which is considered to be exogenous and is based on reserves supplied by the Federal Reserve System ( $R^s$ ),<sup>3</sup> and the other based on reserves created by member bank

<sup>1</sup>Since all the terms in  $m^2$  are functions of  $i$  and/or  $\rho$ .

<sup>2</sup>See, for example, L. Grambley and S. Chase (27), A. Meigs (40), F. Modigliani (44) and S. Goldfeld (25). These and several other studies cited in the bibliography will not be discussed because of their highly specialized nature.

<sup>3</sup>This is  $M^*$ .

borrowing (B),<sup>1</sup> and therefore considered endogenous."<sup>2</sup> Teigen's goal is to explain the ratio of the observed money stock (M) to the exogenous segment of the total money supply (M\*). He asserts that this ratio is a function of the profitability of bank lending. The important conclusions of the Teigen model are derived from his definitions of the money stock and the public's demand for currency and demand deposits (which he assumes are a constant proportion of the actual money stock).

$$M = \frac{k}{1-c-h} (R^s - R^e) + \frac{k}{1-c-h} (B - \frac{1}{k} D'_g) \quad (1.2-28)$$

where k is the reciprocal of the weighted average reserve ratio, c is the fraction of M held as currency by the public, h is the fraction of M held by the public as demand deposits in nonmember banks,  $R^e$  is excess reserves, and  $D'_g$  is U. S. government deposits in member banks.

$$M^* = \frac{k}{1-c-h} (R^s) = k^* R^s \quad (1.2-29)$$

and

$$\frac{M}{M^*} = X(r_c, r) \quad (1.2-30)$$

where r is a measure of the return on bank loans and  $r_c$  is a measure of the cost of bank loans.

$\frac{\partial X}{\partial r} > 0$  indicating that as the return on loans increases the endogenous portion of M increases relative to M\*.  $\frac{\partial X}{\partial r_c} < 0$  indicating that as the cost of loans increases, M\* becomes a larger proportion of M.

---

<sup>1</sup>This is B\*.

<sup>2</sup>Teigen, op.cit., p. 478.



Thus, Teigen breaks the money stock down into endogenous and exogenous portions and attempts to explain the relation between the actual money stock and the exogenous portion in terms of the returns and costs of bank loans. Changes in these factors presumably change the quantity of loans banks are willing to supply and thus result in portfolio re-adjustment by the banking system, fueling changes in the actual stock of money.

The de Leeuw model is part of the Brookings-SSRC model. His portion of the overall model deals with the financial sector. There are seven markets: (1) bank reserves, (2) currency, (3) demand deposits, (4) time deposits, (5) U. S. securities, (6) "savings and insurance," and (7) private securities. The sectors included are: (1) banks, (2) nonbank financial, (3) the Federal Reserve, (4) the Treasury, and (5) the public. This submodel (of the SSRC model) assumes that the value of real variables is known and does not consider the affects of changes in the various rates of interest, or the money stock on the real variables in the model. (Their effects are measured elsewhere in the Brookings model.)

The model itself is composed of 19 simultaneous equations, four of which are identities (the reserve identity, etc.) and the rest of which express the desired changes in assets in terms of lagged asset holdings, rates of return, and various short-run constraints on asset holding. Solving this system simultaneously, de Leeuw derives the following expression for the money stock:<sup>1</sup>

---

<sup>1</sup>de Leeuw, op.cit., p. 518.

$$S_M = \frac{RES_{NBC}}{1 - R_{DD} + 0.84 [RRR_{DD}] [R_{DD} + R_{DD_{GF}}] + 0.82 [RRR_{DT}] [R_{DT}] + [0.011 RM_{FRB} - 0.010 RM_{GBS_3} - 0.007] [R_{DD} + R_{DT}]} \quad (1.2-31)$$

where  $S_M$  is the money supply (private demand deposits (DD) and currency);  $R_{DD} = \frac{DD}{S_M}$ ;  $R_{DT} = \frac{DT}{S_M}$ ;  $R_{DD_{GF}} = \frac{DD_{GF}}{S_M}$ ;  $DT$  is private time deposits;  $RES_{NBC}$  is unborrowed reserves plus currency held by member banks;  $RRR_{DD}$  is a weighted average of required reserve ratios against demand deposits;  $RRR_{DT}$  is a weighted average of required reserve ratios against time deposits;  $DD_{GF}$  is government demand deposits;  $RM_{FRB}$  is the discount rate; and  $RM_{GBS_3}$  is the average market yield on three-month Treasury bills. Substituting the definitions for  $R_{DD}$  and  $R_{DT}$  into 1.2-31 and using the  $a_i$  to replace the constants, we have

$$S_M = \frac{RES_{NBC}}{1 - \frac{DD}{S_M} + a_1 RRR_{DD} \left( \frac{DD + DD_{GF}}{S_M} \right) + a_2 RRR_{DT} \left( \frac{DT}{S_M} \right) + [a_3 RM_{FRB} - a_4 RM_{GSB_3} - a_5] \left[ \frac{DD + DT}{S_M} \right]} \quad (1.2-32)$$

Which clearly shows the dependence of the right-hand side of 1.2-31 on  $S_M$ , supposedly given by equation 1.2-31. Solving 1.2-32 for  $S_M$  yields

$$S_M = RES_{NBC} + DD - 0.84 [RRR_{DD}] [DD + DD_{GF}] - 0.82 RRR_{DT} DT - [0.011 RM_{FRB} - 0.010 RM_{FBS_3} - 0.007] [DD + DT] \quad (1.2-33)$$

Equation 1.2-33, derived from de Leeuw's expression for the money stock, says that the money supply,  $S_M$ , is smaller in size than unborrowed reserves plus currency held by the banks plus private demand deposits. This is a nonsense result and throws suspicion on the entire de Leeuw model.

For the month of April, 1969, the appropriate figures (taken from the July, 1969, Federal Reserve Bulletin) are (in billions of dollars):

|                            |              |
|----------------------------|--------------|
| Total reserves             | 27.079       |
| Borrowings                 | .996         |
| Unborrowed reserves        | 26.083       |
| Total demand deposits      | 152.8        |
| Government demand deposits | 5.1          |
| Private demand deposits    | 147.7        |
| Discount rate              | 5.5 percent  |
| Yield on three month bills | 6.11 percent |
| Time deposits              | 201.6        |

Plugging these figures into Equation 1.2-33 and performing the arithmetic, we find that de Leeuw's equation gives a money supply of 150.64 billion dollars. The actual money supply for April, 1969, was 196.7 billion dollars. The difference between de Leeuw's prediction and the actual money stock is primarily the 43.9 billion dollars of currency in circulation in April. As can be seen from Equation 1.2-33, this component of the money supply has been lost in de Leeuw's formulation.

Of the models reviewed here, the de Leeuw model is most similar to the approach we have taken. The other models tend to be deficient in two respects. First, they are too aggregative in the sense that the economy is broken down into only three sectors--the government, banks, and the public. No distinctions between households, manufacturing firms, and nonbank financial firms are drawn. Second, they all hide the general equilibrium nature of the monetary mechanism. In the first

two models reviewed, the behavior functions of the various sectors are not explicitly specified. The Teigen model while specifying the public's demands for demand deposits and time deposits does so in terms of the total money stock, takes the total stock of money as the independent variable in these functions. While such a formulation will probably yield significant empirical results, from a theoretical point of view it seems awkward to visualize the public changing their holdings of demand and time deposits in response to a change in  $M$  rather than because of changes in income, prices, and interest rates. Hiding the general equilibrium nature of the problem also precludes description of the effects of changes in the money stock on the real variables of the economy. (This can be done in the SSRC model, but not by the de Leeuw sub-model itself.)

The purpose of this work is, however, not to repudiate any of the existing work in this area, but rather to extend and amplify the analysis begun by these more narrow and specialized studies.

## CHAPTER II. THE MODEL

## Introduction

The model is made up of five sectors: the public sector, the manufacturing sector (the firms), the banking sector (the banks), the nonbank financial sector (the intermediaries), and the government sector. The purpose of this chapter is to spell out the details of each sector and the relationships between the sectors. The solution to the model will be considered in Chapters 3 and 4.

The behavioral relations for each sector are given in both implicit and explicit form. For simplicity it is assumed: (1) most of the explicit forms are linear and reflect either utility or profit maximizing behavior, and (2) the individual units in each sector are homogeneous so that in most cases, aggregate levels can be obtained by summing the representative functions.

The Appendix lists the symbols used in the model and their meaning.

## Production, Investment and Growth

Technology is assumed to be characterized by increasing opportunity costs and is constant over time. For simplicity the following assumptions are made:

1. There are only two inputs--capital and labor. A unit of labor is indistinguishable from any other unit of labor. Capital is also perfectly homogeneous.

2. There are only two outputs--capital and the consumption good. The consumption good is perfectly homogeneous.
3. Firms fall into two categories--those that produce only the capital good and those that produce only the consumer good. Each firm within each category is identical to every other firm in the group. There is a large enough number of firms in each category so that, coupled with freedom of entry and exit, each firm is a perfect competitor in the output market.
4. Individuals in the economy have identical endowments of capital and labor. No organization controls the supply of either capital or labor. Thus, the capital good firms are also perfect competitors in the input market and the labor market is perfectly competitive.

### Production

The aggregate production function for the capital good is given by

$$X_k^a = X_k(L_k, X_{kk}) \quad (2.2-1)$$

where  $L_k$  is the amount of labor used in the production of capital and  $X_{kk}$  is the amount of capital used in the production of capital,

$$\frac{\partial X_k^a}{\partial L_k} > 0, \quad \frac{\partial X_k^a}{\partial X_{kk}} > 0, \quad \frac{\partial^2 X_k^a}{\partial L_k^2} < 0, \quad \frac{\partial^2 X_k^a}{\partial X_{kk}^2} < 0,$$

and

$$\frac{\partial^2 X_k^a}{\partial L_k \partial X_{kk}} \gg 0.$$

If there are  $n$  firms producing capital, the production function for the  $i^{\text{th}}$  individual firm is

$$X_{ki} = \frac{X_k^a}{n} = X_k \left( \frac{L_k}{n}, \frac{X_{kk}}{n} \right). \quad (2.2-2)$$

The aggregate production function for the consumer good firms is given by:

$$X_c^a = X_c(L_c, X_{kc}) \quad (2.2-3)$$

where  $L_c$  is the amount of labor used in the production of the consumption good and  $X_{kc}$  is the amount of capital used in the production of the consumption good,

$$\frac{\partial^2 X_c^a}{\partial L_c^2} > 0, \quad \frac{\partial X_c^a}{\partial X_{kc}} > 0, \quad \frac{\partial^2 X_c^a}{\partial L_c \partial X_{kc}} < 0, \quad \frac{\partial^2 X_c^a}{\partial X_{kc}^2} < 0,$$

and 
$$\frac{\partial^2 X_c^a}{\partial X_{kc} \partial L_c} \gtrless 0.$$

If there are  $m$  firms producing the consumer good, the production function for the  $j^{\text{th}}$  firm is

$$X_{cj} = \frac{X_c^a}{m} = X_c \left( \frac{L_c}{m}, \frac{X_{kc}}{m} \right) \quad (2.2-4)$$

The transformation curve is shown below. The transformation function is given by

$$X_c = T(X_k) \quad (2.2-5)$$

where 1.  $T(0) = \alpha_{ci}$

$$2. \quad T(\alpha_{ki}) = 0$$

$$3. \quad \frac{\partial X_k}{\partial X_c} < 0$$

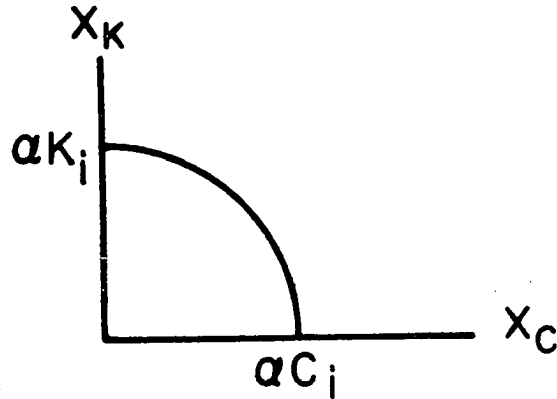


Figure 1. The transformation curve

$\alpha_{ci}$  is the maximum production of the consumption good in period  $i$  while  $\alpha_{ki}$  represents the maximum production of capital for the same period.

Defining the transformation function implicitly we have

$$T'(X_k, X_c) = 0. \quad (2.2-6)$$

Thus  $\bar{X} = (\bar{X}_k, \bar{X}_c)$  is a full employment output vector if

$$T'(\bar{X}_k, \bar{X}_c) = 0 \quad (2.2-7)$$

$\bar{X}' = (X'_k, X'_c)$  is less than full employment if

$$T'(X'_k, X'_c) < 0. \quad (2.2-8)$$

If  $T' < 0$  the unused productive potential of the economy is measured by the negative value of  $T$ . The economy is in full employment equilibrium

if 2.2-6 is satisfied and if  $\frac{P_c}{P_k} = \frac{dX_k}{dX_c}$ . For purposes of the model we



assume that the explicit form of 2.2-5 is

$$X_{ci}^2 + X_{ki}^2 = \alpha_{ki}^2 \quad (2.2-9)$$

and  $\alpha_{ci} = \alpha_{ki}$  for all  $i$ . Thus the explicit transformation curve assumed is a quarter circle in the positive quadrant. Writing 2.2-9 in a form equivalent to 2.2-2 we have that  $X'_i = (X'_{ci}, X'_{ki})$  is a full employment output vector if

$$X'_{ki} = \sqrt{\alpha_{ki}^2 - X_{ci}^2}, \quad X'_{ki} \geq 0. \quad (2.2-10)$$

The marginal rate of transformation is

$$MRT = - \frac{dX_c}{dX_k} = + \frac{X_k}{(\alpha_k^2 - X_k^2)^{\frac{1}{2}}} \quad (2.2-11)$$

When 2.2-10 is satisfied output is at full employment and where, in addition 2.2-11 is equal to the price ratio, output is also an equilibrium output.

The explicit form of 2.2-7 is simply

$$X_{ci}^2 + X_{ki}^2 - \alpha_{ki}^2 = 0. \quad (2.2-12)$$

### Growth and investment

The labor force is assumed to grow at the same rate as the population. This rate is assumed to be a function of the rate of change of the real output of the consumption good over time.

$$\frac{dL}{dt}/L = \lambda = \lambda\left(\frac{dX}{dt}^c\right) \quad (2.2-13)$$

where  $\lambda$  is the rate of growth of the labor force,  $\lambda\left(\frac{dX}{dt}^c\right)$  is functional notation, and where  $1 \geq \frac{\frac{d\lambda}{dX}}{\frac{d}{d\left(\frac{dX}{dt}^c\right)}} > 0$ .

The rate of growth of the capital stock,  $k$ , is not tied to the rate of growth of the labor force. Gross and net investment are determined by the interaction of the supply and demand for capital. In general, however,  $k$  is assumed to be a function of the price of capital, the price of the firms' output, the firms' profit expectations, the various rates of interest, the rate of depreciation, and the existing stock of capital. The demand for capital is composed of both a stock demand for capital,  $D_k$ , and a flow demand,  $dK$ .<sup>1</sup> The stock demand is given by

$$D_k = D_k(P_k, r, \emptyset) \quad (2.2-14)$$

where  $r$  is a vector of interest rates  $r = (r_f, r_g, r_t, \text{etc.})$  and  $\emptyset$  is a profit expectation function; also

$$\frac{\partial D_k}{\partial P_k} < 0, \quad \frac{\partial D_k}{\partial r} < 0, \quad \text{and} \quad \frac{\partial D_k}{\partial \emptyset} > 0.$$

The flow demand for capital,  $dK$ , is given by

$$dK = nK \quad (2.2-15)$$

where  $n$  is the rate of depreciation,  $0 < n < 1$  and  $K$  is the existing capital stock.

---

<sup>1</sup>See P. Davidson (13).

The supply of capital is also composed of a stock supply and a flow supply. The stock supply,  $S_k$ , is simply equal to the existing capital stock while the flow supply,  $s_k$ , is assumed to be dependent on the price of capital.

$$s_k = s_k(P_k) \quad (2.2-16)$$

where  $\frac{ds_k}{dP_k} > 0$ .

Diagrammatically we have

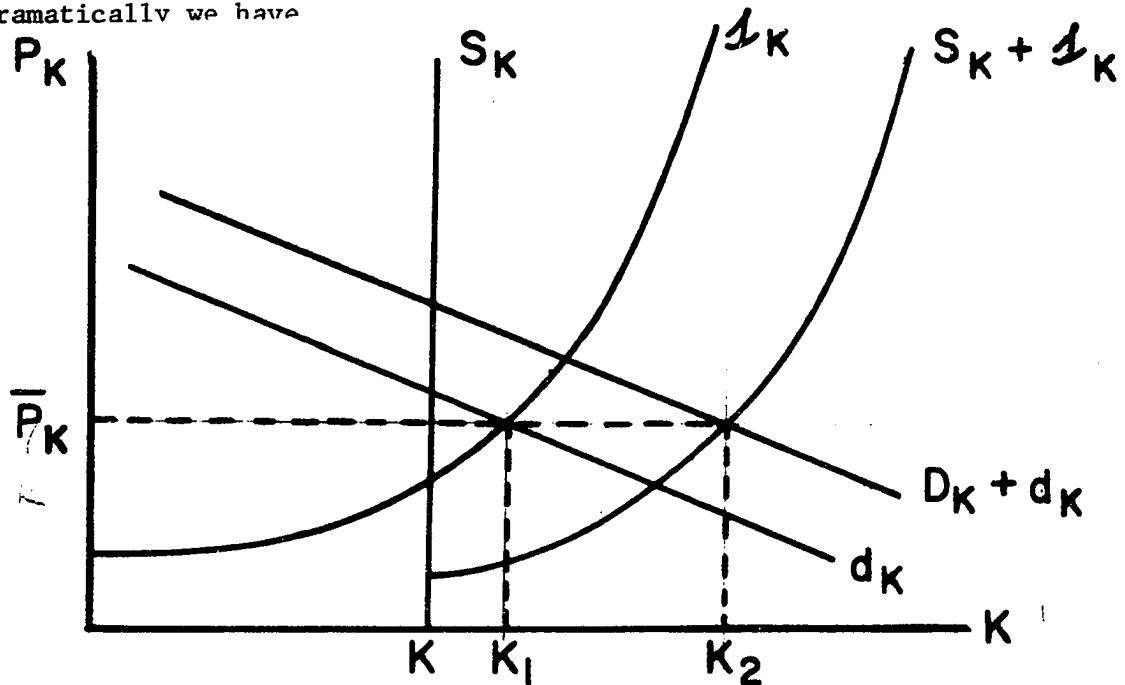


Figure 2. Supply and demand for capital

where  $D_k + d_k$  is the market (stock + flow) demand for capital and  $S_k + s_k$  is the market (stock + flow) supply of capital.  $\bar{P}_k$  is the equilibrium price of capital. At this price gross investment is equal to  $K_2 - K$  and net investment equal to  $K_1 - K$ .

Note that it is the rates of interest relevant for financing and

determining relevant discount rates that, along with profit expectations, determine the exact locations of  $D_k$ . As rates fall  $D_k$  shifts outward, ceteris paribus.

Although it would be more elegant to consider gross and net investment for each group of firms separately, we shall assume that 2.2-14, 2.2-15, and 2.2-16 are defined in such a manner that their solution as shown in Figure 2 represents the aggregate levels of gross and net investment for both groups of firms combined.

The rate of growth of the capital stock,  $k$ , is, in terms of Figure 2,

$$k = \frac{K + K_1 - K}{K} = \frac{K_1}{K}. \quad (2.2-17)$$

We must now consider the effects of changes in the capital stock and the labor force on the transformation curve, given that technology is constant. The question here is basically if  $L_t, K_t$  give  $\alpha_{kt} = \alpha_{ct}$ , what will  $\alpha_{ct+1}$  and  $\alpha_{kt+1}$  equal if  $L$  grows by  $\lambda_t$  percent and  $K$  grows by  $k_t$  percent,  $\lambda_t \gtrless k_t$ , e.g. what relation will the transformation curve in  $t + 1$  bear to the curve in  $t$ ? Will relation 2.2-9 hold over time? If not, what other assumptions about the nature of production must we make to insure that it does?

Writing the total differentials of the production functions we have

$$dX_c = \frac{\partial X_c}{\partial K_c} dK_c + \frac{\partial X_c}{\partial L_c} dL_c \quad (2.2-18)$$

$$dX_k = \frac{\partial X_k}{\partial K_k} dK_k + \frac{\partial X_k}{\partial L_k} dL_k \quad (2.2-19)$$

From the definitions of  $k$  and  $\lambda$ ,

$$k = \frac{\dot{K}}{K} = \frac{dK}{dt}/K \quad (2.2-20)$$

$$\lambda = \frac{\dot{L}}{L} = \frac{dL}{dt}/L, \quad (2.2-21)$$

we have

$$\frac{dK}{dt} = kK \quad (2.2-22)$$

$$\text{and} \quad \frac{dL}{dt} = \lambda L \quad (2.2-23)$$

from which it follows that

$$dK = kKdt \quad (2.2-24)$$

$$\text{and} \quad dL = \lambda Ldt. \quad (2.2-25)$$

Substituting 2.2-24 and 2.2-25 into 2.2-18 and 2.2-19 we have

$$dX_c = \frac{\partial X_c}{\partial K} kKdt + \frac{\partial X_c}{\partial L} \lambda Ldt \quad (2.2-26)$$

$$\text{and} \quad dX_k = \frac{\partial X_k}{\partial K} kKdt + \frac{\partial X_k}{\partial L} \lambda Ldt \quad (2.2-27)$$

from which it follows that

$$\frac{dX_c}{dt} = \frac{\partial X_c}{\partial K} kK + \frac{\partial X_c}{\partial L} \lambda L \quad (2.2-28)$$

$$\text{and} \quad \frac{dX_k}{dt} = \frac{\partial X_k}{\partial K} kK + \frac{X_k}{L} \lambda L. \quad (2.2-29)$$

2.2-28 and 2.2-29 tell us how the maximum possible outputs of the consumer good and the capital good change over time if the entire increase in the stocks of labor and capital are used in one good or the other. In order for the transformation curve to shift in a parallel way as a result of the growth of capital and labor it is necessary and sufficient that 2.2-28 equal 2.2-29. Since we are starting from a position where  $\alpha_c = \alpha_k$  only the rates of change need be equal to insure the increase in  $\alpha_c$  is equal to the increase in  $\alpha_k$ . Thus we have

$$\frac{\partial X_c}{\partial K_c} kK + \frac{\partial X_c}{\partial L_c} \lambda L = \frac{\partial X_k}{\partial K_k} kK + \frac{\partial X_k}{\partial L_k} \lambda L. \quad (2.2-30)$$

2.2-30 can be rewritten in two ways, both of which express the condition necessary for a parallel shift of the transformation curve.

$$1. \quad kK \left( \frac{\partial X_c}{\partial K_c} - \frac{\partial X_k}{\partial K_k} \right) + \lambda L \left( \frac{\partial X_c}{\partial L_c} - \frac{\partial X_k}{\partial L_k} \right) = 0$$

Regardless of the relative sizes of  $k$  and  $\lambda$  and of their signs, if the marginal product of capital in production of the consumer good is equal to its marginal product in producing capital and if the same is true of the marginal products of labor in its two uses, 1 will be satisfied. If these marginal products are not equal 2 expresses the condition that must be satisfied for parallel shifts. 2 is also derived directly from 2.2-30.

$$2. \quad \frac{\lambda L}{kK} = \frac{\frac{\partial X_k}{\partial K_k} - \frac{\partial X_c}{\partial K_c}}{\frac{\partial X_c}{\partial L_c} - \frac{\partial X_k}{\partial L_k}}$$

Since 2 places no unrealistic constraints on the production processes, we assume that it is satisfied for all  $\lambda$  and  $k$  between  $\pm 1$ .

### The labor market

The aggregate supply of labor is a function of the wage rate,  $P_\ell$ , and the size of the population. If it is assumed that the labor force is a constant percentage of the population, we may write

$$S^\ell = S^\ell(P_\ell, L) \quad (2.2-31)$$

where  $\frac{\partial S^\ell}{\partial P_\ell} > 0$  and  $\frac{\partial S^\ell}{\partial L} > 0$ .

At any point in time the supply of labor may be taken to be a function of only the price of labor.

The aggregate demand for labor is composed of the demand of the capital good firms and the consumer good firms as well as the demands of the banks, government, and intermediaries. No attempt will be made to specify explicitly the demand functions for these sectors. (This is in keeping with our practice of not specifying these sectors demand for the capital good explicitly.) We include this demand by adding a constant,  $E$ , to the sum of 2.2-32 and 2.2-33. These demands are

$$D_k^\ell = MP_{\ell k} P_k \quad (2.2-32)$$

$$D_c^\ell = MP_{\ell c} P_c \quad (2.2-33)$$

since all firms are perfect competitors.

The aggregate demand is simply

$$D^\ell = MP_{\ell k} P_k + MP_{\ell c} P_c + E. \quad (2.2-34)$$

Under our assumptions on production, the aggregate demand curve will be downward sloping. Since labor is homogeneous, it must be paid the same wage in each use. Thus we have

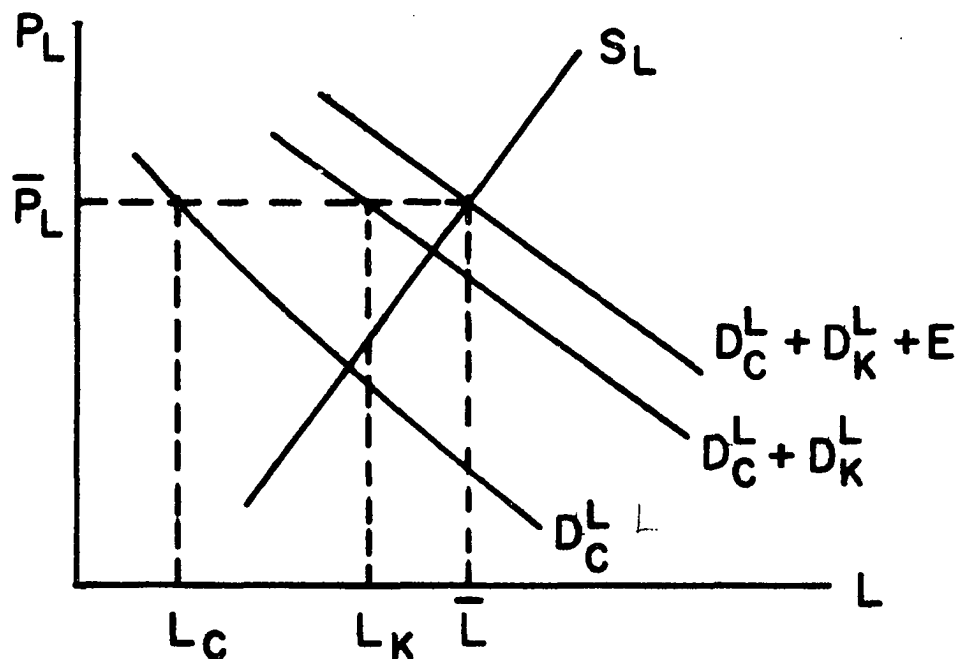


Figure 3. Supply and demand for labor

$\bar{P}_\ell$  is the equilibrium price of labor. The amounts employed by each group of firms can be read from the diagram.  $\bar{L}$  is the total amount employed,  $L_C$  the amount used by the consumer good firms, and  $\bar{L} - L_C$  the amount employed by the capital good firms. No restrictions are placed on  $d\bar{P}_C/dt$ , e.g., no assumption of wage inflexibility is made. Thus, in one sense, labor will be fully employed so long as the existing  $P_\ell$  is an equilibrium price. If  $P_C > \bar{P}_\ell$  involuntary unemployment exists. If  $P_\ell < \bar{P}_\ell$  labor is fully employed, even though there is a positive excess demand for labor.



Production equilibrium and full employment

The following conditions must be satisfied for the productive sector of the economy to be in equilibrium.

1.  $P_\ell$  is equal in both uses.
2.  $P_k$  is equal in both uses.
3.  $P_\ell = MP_{\ell k} P_k = MP_{\ell c} P_c$ .
4.  $P_k = MP_{k k} P_k = MP_{k c} P_c$ .

Condition 4 clearly implies that the marginal product of capital in the production of capital must be one in equilibrium. This is not startling since the capital good firms would obviously increase their own use of capital if  $MP_{kk} > 1$  and reduce it if  $MP_{kk} < 1$ .

5. The marginal rate of technical substitution of labor for capital equals the input price ratio for both groups of firms.

$$a. \quad MRTS_{k/\ell}^k = \frac{MP_{kk}}{MP_{\ell k}} = \frac{P_k}{P_\ell}.$$

$$b. \quad MRTS_{k/\ell}^c = \frac{MP_{kc}}{MP_{\ell c}} = \frac{P_k}{P_\ell}.$$

$$6. \quad MRTS_{k/\ell}^k = MRTS_{k/\ell}^c = \frac{P_k}{P_\ell}.$$

When conditions 1 through 6 are satisfied the productive sector is in equilibrium in the sense that, given the total amounts of the inputs being used, it is impossible to increase output of earlier commodity by redistributing the capital and labor being used between the two groups of firms without reducing the output of the other commodity. However, 1 - 6 are not sufficient to insure that the equilibrium output vector is also a full employment output vector. This is simply because nothing

in these conditions implies that the total stocks of capital and labor are being used. That is, 1 through 6 may be satisfied under conditions of unemployed labor and/or capital. In this case, even though redistribution of the inputs actually being used cannot increase the output of one commodity without reducing the output of the other, it is entirely possible that increasing the total use of capital and/or labor can lead to an increase in the production of both goods. Thus, another condition must be added to insure that the equilibrium is also a full employment equilibrium. This condition is simply that the outputs of capital and the consumer goods that satisfy 1 through 6 also satisfy

$$7. \quad \bar{X}_k = \sqrt{\alpha_k^2 - \bar{X}_c^2}$$

where  $\bar{X}_k$  and  $\bar{X}_c$  are the outputs resulting from satisfying 1 through 6. Note that the aggregate level of consumption demand which we have not yet considered has an impact on these conditions through its influence on  $P_c$  and  $\bar{X}_c$  and, of course, may prevent 7 from being satisfied.

#### The Manufacturing Sector (The Firms)

The firms are divided into two groups--one group produces only the capital good while the other firm produces only the consumer good. Each group is assumed to be perfectly competitive. The only interfirm purchases are purchases of capital goods. Each group will be treated in the aggregate rather than on an individual firm basis.

Production and sales for each firm in a group are identical (see the section on production in this chapter). Each firm has a desired level of retained earnings such that the aggregate desired level is given by

$$E_t^D = \alpha K_t + \beta I_{nt-1} + s [P_{ct} X_{ct} + P_{kt} X_{kt}]. \quad (2.3-1)$$

$\alpha K_t$  represents depreciation,  $P_{ct} X_{ct} + P_{kt} X_{kt}$  is, of course, aggregate sales in  $t$  and  $s$  is a constant,  $0 < s < 1$ . This term is included to reflect the demand for retained earnings arising from the desired of the firm to insure itself from the unexpected. Such risks are simplistically assumed to grow in proportion to total sales.  $\beta I_{nt-1}$  is a factor reflecting the influence of past net investment on the level of retained earnings, a portion of which it is assumed are kept to meet the demand for financing net investment in future periods. For simplicity only one previous net investment figure is used in 2.3-1, although greater realism could be obtained by perhaps using average of several past periods. It is assumed that  $\beta$  is greater than zero and less than one. Equation 2.3-1 also gives the desired level of financial assets--cash, demand deposits, time deposits, government securities, and deposits in intermediaries--in the aggregate for period  $t$  since it is in these forms that retained earnings are held. At the end of each period the actual and desired stock of retained earnings are equalized by adjustment of the profit payments to the owners of the firms. Only when profit payments are zero would it be possible for the actual stock of retained earnings to be less than the desired level. In no case will the actual stock exceed the desired.

Before discussing the desired distribution of the stock of retained earnings another factor influencing the actual stock must be discussed. This is the relationship between desired financing and actual financing.

The replacement demand for capital,  $I_g - I_n$ , is assumed to be paid for completely out of retained earnings. Only a portion of net investment, equal to  $\beta I_{nt-1}$ , is paid for from retained earnings. The remainder,  $I_{nt} - \beta I_{nt-1}$ , creates the so-called demand for financing. This demand is the basis for the firms' demand for bank loans and loans from intermediaries and for its desire to issue more debt (the supply of firms nonownership securities). We have

$$F_t^D = I_{nt} - \beta I_{nt-1} \quad (2.3-2)$$

where  $F_t^D$  is the desired level of financing in period  $t$ .

$$L_{ft}^D = f_2(r, F_t^D) \quad (2.2-3)$$

$$\text{explicitly, } L_{ft}^D = b_f F_t^D + A_3 \bar{r}_f \quad (2.2-3a)$$

where  $L_{ft}^D$  is firms' total demand for loans in  $t$ ,  $A_3$  is a vector of constants,  $\bar{r}$  is a vector of all interest rates, and  $F_t^D$  the total amount of financing desired.

$$F_t^S = f_3(\bar{r}_f, F_t^D) \quad (2.2-4)$$

$$\text{explicitly } F_t^S = b_f F_t^D + A_4 \bar{r}_f \quad (2.3-4a)$$

where  $F_t^S$  is the supply of firms' securities in  $t$  and all other symbols are as defined above. The firms' demand for loans,  $L_{ft}^D$ , is broken down into a demand for bank loans,  $L_{ft}^{Db}$ , and a demand for loans from intermediaries,  $L_{ft}^{Dn}$ ,

$$L_{ft}^{Db} = L_f^{Db} (r_{bt}^f, r_{nt}^f, L_{ft}^D) \quad (2.3-5)$$

$$L_{ft}^{Dn} = L_f^{Dn} (r_{bft}^f, r_{nft}^f, L_{ft}^D). \quad (2.3-6)$$

In explicit form

$$L_{ft}^{Db} = a_1 (r_{bt}^f - r_{nt}^f) + b_1 L_{ft}^D \quad (2.3-7)$$

$$L_{ft}^{Dn} = a_2 (r_{bt}^f - r_{nt}^f) + b_2 L_{ft}^D \quad (2.3-8)$$

where  $a_1 = -a_2$ ,  $b_1 + b_2 = 1$ ,  $a_1 < 0$ ,  $a_2 > 0$ . These restrictions on the constants in 2.3-7 and 2.3-8 insure that the sum of 2.3-7 and 2.3-8 equals 2.3-3. The coefficients of  $L_{ft}^D$  are assumed to be constant (and not necessarily equal) to allow for the possibility that the firms may want to borrow different amounts from the two lending sectors even though  $r_b^f = r_n^f$ . This mix of desired borrowing is assumed to be constant over time. If  $L_{ft}$  is the net increase in borrowing and  $F_t$  the net increase in securities outstanding then,

$$I_{nt} - \beta I_{nt-1} - (L_{ft} + B_{ft}) \geq 0. \quad (2.3-9)$$

$L_{ft}$  and  $F_t$  are determined by the interaction of the demand for loans (the supply of securities) and the supply of loans to firms (the total demand for firms' securities). If 2.3-5 equals zero, then the financing demand is satisfied completely by increasing the firms debt. If, however, 2.3-5 is positive the difference is made up by a temporary reduction in the stock of retained earnings below their desired level. (Note that the capital good firms do not themselves extend credit to their purchasers.)

This discrepancy between desired and actual retained earnings is made up by a reduction in profit payments as discussed before.

Let

$$I_{nt} - \beta I_{nt-1} - (L_{ft} + B_{ft}) = \Delta I(A_{ft}) > 0 \quad (2.3-10)$$

where  $\Delta I(A_{ft})$  represents the unintended change in the firms' financial asset position caused by insufficient financing to meet investment demand.  $\Delta I(A_{ft})$  represents a redistribution of income away from the owners of the consumer good firms to the owners of capital good firms. As we shall see, aggregate public income is not reduced. In summary,

$$E_t^D \equiv E_{t+}^a = E_{t-}^a + \Delta E_t^D \quad (2.3-11)$$

where  $E_{t+}^a$  is the actual stock of retained earnings (or, equivalently, the actual stock of financial assets,  $A_{ft+}^a$ ) at the end of period  $t$ ;  $E_{t-}^a$  is the actual stock of retained earnings at the beginning of period  $t$ , which is equal to the actual and desired stock of retained earnings at the end of period  $t-1$ ; and  $\Delta E_t^D$  is the desired change in the stock of retained earnings during  $t$ .

$\Delta E_t^D$  can be expressed as follows:

$$\Delta E_t^D = \alpha I_{nt-1} + s[P_{ct} X_{ct} + P_{kt} X_{kt} - P_{ct-1} X_{ct-1} - P_{kt-1} X_{kt-1}] + \beta(I_{nt-1} - I_{nt-2}). \quad (2.3-12)$$

Furthermore,  $P_{ct} X_{ct} + P_{kt} X_{kt}$  can be written as a function of  $K_t$

$$P_{ct} X_{ct} + P_{kt} X_{kt} = f_3(K_t). \quad (2.3-13)$$

The function  $f_3$  is really a reduced form of the production function. The level of output is determinate given the amount of capital used under the assumption that, given the input price ratio, the least-cost combination of labor and capital is used. Thus, 2.3-8 becomes

$$\Delta E_t^D = \alpha I_{nt-1} + s[f_3(K_t) - f_3(K_{t-1})] + \beta(I_{nt-1} - I_{nt-2}) \quad (2.3-14)$$

$$\text{or} \quad = \alpha I_{nt-1} + s[f_3(K_{t-1} + I_{nt-1}) - f_3(K_{t-2} + I_{nt-2})] \quad (2.3-15)$$

$$+ \beta(I_{nt-1} - I_{nt-2})$$

$$\text{or} \quad = \alpha I_{nt-1} + s[f_3(K_{t-1} + I_{nt-1}) - f_3(K_{t-2} + I_{nt-2})] \quad (2.3-16)$$

$$+ \beta(I_{nt-1} - I_{nt-2})$$

$$\text{or} \quad = \alpha I_{nt-1} + s[f_3(K_{t-1} - K_{t-2} + I_{nt-1} - I_{nt-2})] \quad (2.3-17)$$

$$+ \beta(I_{nt-1} - I_{nt-2})$$

$$\text{or} \quad \alpha I_{nt-1} + s[f_3(I_{nt-1})] + \beta(I_{nt-1} - I_{nt-1}). \quad (2.3-18)$$

Letting  $(\alpha + \beta)(I_{nt-1}) + sf_3(I_{nt-1})$  equal  $f_4(I_{nt-1})$  we have

$$\Delta E_t^D = f_4(I_{nt-1}) - \beta(I_{nt-2}) \quad (2.3-19)$$

which expresses the dependency of desired changes in retained earnings on net investment. Summing over  $t$  in 2.3-19 (or integrating when time is assumed to be continuous) leads to the dependency of the stock of retained earnings on the capital stock as expressed in 2.3-1. Rewriting 2.3-1 in an analogous manner leads to:

$$E_t^D = \alpha K_t + sf_3(K_t) + \beta (K_t - K_{t-1}) \quad (2.3-20)$$

$$\text{or} \quad = (\alpha + \beta) K_t + sf_3(K_t) - \beta (K_{t-1})$$

$$\text{or, letting} \quad (\alpha + \beta) K_t + sf_3(K_t) = f_3(K_t),$$

$$E_t^D = f_3(K_t) - \beta (K_{t-1}). \quad (2.3-21)$$

The firms' decision-making process in regard to the size and distribution of retained earnings is visualized in the following manner. First a decision is made regarding the desired stock of retained earnings and the necessary adjustments of profit payments made to realize this goal. Second, after desired size has been achieved the firm decides on the desired distribution of retained earnings (financial assets) as described below. Letting  $DE_t^D$  represent the desired distribution of retained earnings in  $t$ , we have:

$$DE_t^D \equiv DA_{ft}^D = f_4(r, PX) \quad (2.3-22)$$

where  $DA_{ft}^D$  is the desired distribution of financial assets,  $r$  is a vector of all interest rates, and  $PX = P_c X_c + P_k X_k$ .  $DA_{ft}^D$  is itself a vector, the elements of which are cash balances, demand deposits, time deposits, government securities, and deposits in intermediaries. Firms are assumed to hold no debt instruments issued by other firms. Thus,

$$DA_{ft}^D = (C_{ft}^D, D_{ft}^D, T_{ft}^D, G_{ft}^D, N_{ft}^D). \quad (2.3-23)$$

$$\text{Obviously,} \quad \sum_{i=1}^5 (DA_{ft}^D)_i \equiv A_{ft}^D \quad (2.3-24)$$



Equation 2.3-17 can be broken down into an interdependent system of equations each giving the desired level of one asset. The desired level of cash balances,  $C_{ft}^D$ , is assumed to depend only on the level of sales. Thus,

$$C_{ft}^D = a_5 [P_{ct} X_{ct} + P_{kt} X_{kt}] \quad (2.3-25)$$

where  $a_5$  is a constant,  $0 < a_5 < 1$ . Changes in rates of interest are assumed not to affect desired currency balances although they are assumed to influence the desired level of demand deposits. Equation 2.3-25 is designed to reflect the assumption that holding currency balances is a nuisance to the firms and such balances are held to an absolute minimum. The desired level of demand deposits is assumed to be a function of the level of sales, the rate of interest on time deposits, and the rate of interest on government securities. Thus,

$$D_{ft}^D = d_f (PX) + A_6 \bar{r}_f. \quad (2.3-26)$$

The desired levels of time deposits, and government securities are also functions of the same variables. Thus,

$$T_{ft}^D = t_f (PX) + A_7 \bar{r}_f; \quad (2.3-27)$$

$$G_{ft}^D = g_f (PX) + A_8 \bar{r}_f; \quad (2.3-28)$$

$$N_{ft}^D = n_f (PX) + A_9 \bar{r}_f. \quad (2.3-29)$$

We now turn to an examination of the sources and uses of income for the firms in the consumer goods group. There are four sources of income for these firms: sales, interest on time deposits, interest on government

securities, and interest on deposits in intermediaries. Let  $R_{ft}$  be the receipts (income) of these firms in period  $t$ . Then

$$R_{f_{ct}} = PX_t + r_{g_t} G_{t_{ct}} + r_{t_t} T_{f_{ct}} + r_{n_t} N_{f_{ct}}. \quad (2.3-30)$$

The uses of income include the following: (1) payments to labor, (2) profit payments ("dividends"), (3) changes in financial asset holdings, (4) loan repayments, (5) debt (security) retirement, and (6) investment expenditure. One and two are treated strictly as residuals and are represented by  $Y_{f_c}$  (income received by the public from consumer goods firms). Changes in financial asset holdings are equal to  $\Delta E_{ct}^D$ . Loan

repayments equal 
$$\sum_{i=t-n}^t \left[ \frac{(1+r_{bf}(i))L_f^b(i)}{N} \right] + \sum_{i=t-n}^t \left[ \frac{(1+r_{nf}(i))L_f^n(i)}{N} \right]$$

abbreviated  $\Sigma L_f$ . Debt retirement equals 
$$\sum_{i=t-n}^t \left[ \frac{(1+r_{fc}(i))F_c(i)}{N} \right]$$

abbreviated  $\Sigma F_c$ . Gross investment equals  $I_{g_c}$ . Let  $U_{f_c}$  represent the sum of one through five. Then  $U_{g_{ct}} = Y_{f_{ct}} + \Delta A_{f_{ct}} + \Sigma L_{f_c} + \Sigma F_c$  (2.3-31)

However  $R_{f_{ct}} < U_{f_{ct}}$  since part of net investment must be financed. Let  $S_{f_c}$  be total spending power of the consumer goods firms in  $t$ . Then

$$S_{f_{ct}} = R_{f_{ct}} + L_{f_{ct}} + F_{ct} \quad (2.3-32)$$

and 
$$S_{f_{ct}} = U_{f_{ct}}. \quad (2.3-33)$$

Inclusion of the capital goods firms allows the elimination of the  $c$  subscript in 2.3-29 to 2.3-32. It is assumed a typical capital good firm, even though satisfying its demand for capital goods from its own

output, has a financing demand identical to the consumer good firm and behaves otherwise in the manner described above. Thus, aggregation over all firms yields the detailed statement of 2.3-33:

$$PX_t + r_{g_t} G_{ft} + r_{t_t} T_{ft} + r_{n_t} N_{ft} + L_{ft} + B_{ft} = \quad (2.3-34)$$

$$\Delta(A_{ft}) + \Sigma L_{ft} + \Sigma B_{ft} + P_{kt} X_{kft} + Y_{ft}$$

$$Y_{ft} = PX_t + r_{g_t} G_{ft} + r_{t_t} T_{ft} + r_{n_t} N_{ft} + L_{ft} + \quad (2.3-35)$$

$$B_{ft} - \Delta(A_{ft}) - \Sigma L_{ft} - \Sigma F_t - P_{kt} X_{kft}$$

#### The Government Sector

All levels of government are treated together--that is, as if there were only one government. No attempt is made to reflect the actual institutional constraints under which "government" operates. The functions our government performs are:

1. Reallocation--All physical production is assumed to take place in the manufacturing sector. The government buys capital and the consumption good from the firms. A portion of these goods is consumed by the government and a portion is distributed to the public free of charge.
2. Economic Regulation--Fiscal policy is not consciously used to regulate the level of economic activity. Government spending is limited to the acquisition of the amount of goods necessary for the operation of the government and for making the (exogenously determined) transfer payments.

Tax receipts are assumed to be equal to these expenditures plus the interest payments on government securities. Conscious economic regulation is attempted through monetary policy exclusively. The standard monetary tools are available-open market operations, changes in the discount rate, and changes in reserve requirements. (Each of these will be considered in detail in Chapter IV.)

#### Taxes and government spending

All taxes are assumed to be paid by the individuals in the economy. No taxes are explicitly levied on the banks, firms, or intermediaries. All profits over and above the requirements for retained earnings to meet future investment are paid to the individual owners of these enterprises. This income is taxed at the same rate as income received from other sources (wage and interest payments). We have then

$$T = t\bar{Y} \quad (2.4-1)$$

where  $T$  is total tax receipts,  $t$  the tax rate, and  $\bar{Y}$  aggregate public income before taxes.  $t$  is assumed to be constant to reflect an earlier assumption of no conscious fiscal policy. Furthermore, government spending is given by:

$$T = \bar{r}_g \bar{G} + P_k X_{kg} + P_c X_{cg} \quad (2.4-2)$$

where  $\bar{r}_g$  and  $\bar{G}$  represent the coupon rate and aggregate face value of government securities outstanding respectively (see the next section). The amounts of capital and the consumer good purchased are determined

residually.

$$P_k X_{kg} = \theta (T - \bar{r}_g \bar{G}) \quad (2.4-3)$$

$$P_c X_{cg} = (1 - \theta)(T - \bar{r}_g \bar{G}) \quad (2.4-4)$$

where  $\theta$  is a positive constant less than one. These relations insure that the budget is balanced.

#### Government securities and monetary affairs

The government issues only one type of security with one year maturity and fixed face value of \$1. The coupon rate is fixed at  $\bar{r}_g$ . The actual rate in any period,  $r_g$ , may, of course, differ from the coupon rate depending on whether or not the bond is sold at its face value.

If  $P_g$  is the price of one security, then

$$\bar{r}_g = P_g r_g \quad (2.4-5)$$

$$\text{or} \quad r_g = \frac{\bar{r}_g}{P_g} \quad (2.4-6)$$

At the end of each year the holder of a bond received  $$(1 + \bar{r}_g)$$  payment of interest and principal. The government is not required to buy back unmatured bonds, although they may be freely traded among individuals and corporate entities. The amounts and timing of government sales and purchases of government securities may be determined either by purely passive reaction to the net demand of the nongovernment sectors or may be determined by conscious monetary policy goals. This area will be examined in detail in Chapters III and IV.

In any event, the effect of net changes in the amount of government securities outstanding will be to change the stock of money in the hands of the private sectors. Suppose  $P_{gt}G_t$  dollars in bonds were issued at the beginning of period  $t$ . At the end of the period  $(1 + \bar{r}_g)G_t$  dollars are paid out in interest and principal. In  $t + 1$ ,  $P_{gt+1}G_{t+1}$  dollars worth of bonds are issued and interest and principal payments are  $(1 + \bar{r}_g)G_{t+1}$  at the end of the period. The initial impact on the money stock in period  $t+1$  is given by  $(1 + \bar{r}_g)G_t - P_{gt+1}G_{t+1}$ . If this is positive, the refunding increases the money stock by  $(1 + \bar{r}_g)G_t - P_{gt+1}G_{t+1}$  times the appropriate multiplier; if negative, the money stock is decreased. The effect of refunding in  $t+2$  will be given by  $(1 + \bar{r}_g)G_{t+1} - P_{gt+2}G_{t+2}$  times the appropriate multiplier, etc. The government's ability to control  $G$ , the number of bonds issued, and  $P_g$  (or  $r_g$ ) is the key element in open-market operations. The size of the multiplier and the strength of the relations between the stock of money and real variables determines the effectiveness of this sort of monetary policy, (see Chapter IV).

When solving the model in the absence of discretionary monetary policy, we shall assume that the government's supply of bonds is infinitely elastic at the current rate of interest (price of bonds). In Chapter IV, this assumption will be removed. Thus,

$$G^S \equiv G^{Da} \quad (2.4-7)$$

where  $G^S$  is the supply of bonds and  $G^{Da}$  the aggregate demand for new bonds. This implies that the price of bonds (actual rate of interest

on governments) is constant over time.

The rediscount mechanism is assumed to operate in the following manner. All loans made by the banks are discounts and are assumed to be eligible paper. The rediscount rate,  $r_d$ , is a percentage of the face value of the notes held by the bank. The bank receives  $(1 - r_d)X$  when it rediscounts a note whose face value is  $X$  dollars. If the total value of the bank's loan portfolio in any period is  $Y$  dollars, the maximum amount of rediscounting is  $(1 - r_d)Y$ .

The government is assumed to rediscount as much paper as the banks offer at the current rediscount rate. The rate itself is set by the monetary authority (see Chapter IV). Thus, for any rediscount rate,

$$d \equiv d^d(r_d) \quad (2.4-8)$$

where  $d$  is the actual amount of rediscounting and  $d^d$  the quantity of rediscounting demanded at rate  $rd$ .

The effect of rediscounting is, as we shall see later, to increase the quantity of bank loans supplied.

The government (monetary authority) also establishes, and is free to change, the reserve requirement,  $r$ . It is assumed that both time and demand deposits are subject to the same reserve requirements. Thus, the total amount of required reserves,  $R$ , is given by

$$R = r(D + T) \quad (2.4-9)$$

where  $D$  is the aggregate level of demand deposits and  $T$  the aggregate level of time deposits. All banks in the economy are assumed to be

subject to the regulation of the monetary authority. Effects of change in the reserve requirement on the stock of money are discussed in Chapter IV.

The government is strictly a passive supplier-absorber of currency. Thus, at any point in time, the stock of currency,  $C_t$ , is identical to the aggregate demand for currency,  $C_t^{Da}$ . Thus,

$$C_t \equiv C_t^{Da}. \quad (2.4-10)$$

Until monetary policy is considered explicitly, the government is essentially passive in the model.

#### The Banking Sector

Banks perform two major functions: they accept time and demand deposits from the public, the firms, and the intermediaries and they make loans to the public and the firms. As adjuncts to these services they also hold currency and government securities as secondary reserves, engage in rediscounting, and hold primary reserves.

#### Time and demand deposits

Time deposits earn a yearly rate of interest,  $r_t$ . This rate is paid on all time deposits regardless of their source (public, firm, or intermediary). The banks view all time deposits as homogeneous, regardless of their source. Even though some time deposits (or demand deposits) may be held as compensatory balances, no attempt is made to distinguish this portion of deposits from "ordinary" time or demand deposits. The banks' demand for time deposits is perfectly elastic at the current rate of interest on time deposits. Banks "buy" the



total amount of time deposits willing to be "sold" by the other sectors at the prevailing rate on time deposits. Thus, letting  $T^D$  represent the banks' demand for time deposits, we have

$$T^D \equiv T_p^S + T_f^S + T_n^S \quad (2.5-1)$$

where  $T_p^S$ ,  $T_f^S$ , and  $T_n^S$  represent the quantity of time deposits by the three sectors.  $T_t$  is the total level of time deposits in period  $t$ ; thus,

$$T_t = T_t^D \equiv T_{pt}^S + T_{ft}^S + T_{nt}^S \quad (2.5-2)$$

The rate banks pay on time deposits is assumed to depend on the profitability of loans and the cost of obtaining reserves from alternate sources. The rates of loans to the public ( $r_{bp}$ ) and to the firms ( $r_{bf}$ ), minus the rate on time deposits are surrogates for profitability. The only other source of reserves under the control of the banks is the rediscount mechanism (see below). The rediscount rate ( $r_d$ ) measures the cost of reserves obtained in this manner. Thus,

$$r_t = r_t'(r_{bp} - r_t, r_{bf} - r_t, r_d). \quad (2.5-3)$$

Simplifying,

$$r_t = r_t(r_{bp}, r_{bf}, r_d) \quad (2.5-4)$$

The explicit form of 2.5-4 is

$$r_t = r_{tt-1} + a(\bar{L}_b - L_{bp}^D - L_{bf}^D). \quad (2.5-5)$$

where  $1 > a > 0$ . Increases in  $r_{bf}$  or  $r_{bp}$  make loans more profitable and thus induce the banks to attempt to attract more time deposits by raising  $r_t$  and vice-versa. Increases in the rediscount rate tend to reduce rediscounting and thus induce the bank to look elsewhere for reserves to make up for the drop in rediscounting.

Demand deposits do not earn a monetary return. Service charges are ignored. The banks accept all demand deposits offered them. Thus, the banks' demand for demand deposits is perfectly elastic. Letting  $D^D$  represent the banks' demand for demand deposits, we have

$$D^D = D_p^S + D_f^S + D_n^S. \quad (2.5-6)$$

The total amount of demand deposits in  $t$ ,  $D_t$ ,<sup>1</sup> is given by

$$D_t = D_t^D = D_{pt}^S + D_{ft}^S + D_n^S. \quad (2.5-7)$$

Demand and time deposits are the only liabilities of the bank that will be given explicit treatment. The only explicit recognition of capital account items is the assumption that all profits are paid out to the banks' owners.

---

<sup>1</sup>Banks are assumed not to hold demand deposits in other banks. This in effect eliminates the correspondent banking system from consideration in the model.

Loans, reserves and rediscounting

The legal reserve requirement,  $r$ , applies to both demand and time deposits. The total level of required reserves in period  $t$ ,  $R_t$ , is given by

$$R_t = r_t (D_t + T_t). \quad (2.5-8)$$

Required reserves are all held in the form of noninterest bearing deposits at the monetary authority. For simplicity vault cash, or cash held by the banks, is not assumed to be part of required, or primary, reserves.

Secondary reserves are held in three forms--cash, securities issued by firms, and government securities. Desired cash balances,  $C_b$ , are given by

$$C_b = \gamma (D + T) \quad (2.5-9)$$

where  $1 > \gamma > 0$ . Interest rates are omitted from 2.5-9 reflecting the assumption that banks hold vault cash strictly to meet day-to-day withdrawal requirements and that any cash over the minimum needed for these requirements will be used to buy government securities as long as  $r_g$  is greater than zero. This is equivalent to assuming that the banks do not have a speculative demand for money in this case, cash.

The desired level of government securities,  $G_b$ , is given by

$$G_b = \rho (D + T) + A_{10} \bar{r}_b. \quad (2.5-10)$$

$\rho$  is a positive constant less than one. Its magnitude is determined by the "institutional" requirements for secondary reserves such as seasonal fluctuations in deposits, etc.  $a_{10}$  is a positive constant

reflecting the assumptions that (1) as the yield on governments increases, secondary reserves become more governments become a more attractive form in which to hold secondary reserves--e.g. an increase in  $r_g$  causes a larger portion of secondary reserves to be held in governments, ceteris paribus, and (2) an increase in  $r_g$  also causes the total amount of desired secondary reserves to increase, ceteris paribus.  $b_{10}$  is a negative constant reflecting the fact that secondary reserves will be switched from governments, to firms' securities as the yield on these securities rises, ceteris paribus.  $f_{10}$ ,  $d_{10}$  and  $e_{10}$  are also negative constants reflecting the assumptions that (1) as  $r_t$  rises, profit margins are squeezed, inducing the banks to shift funds from low-yielding secondary reserves to higher yielding loans and (2) as the rates banks charge for loans increase ( $r_{bp}$  and  $r_{bf}$ ) the increased profitability of loans also tends to reduce the level of desired secondary reserves. The converses of the above assumptions are also assumed to hold.

The desired level of firms securities,  $F_b$ , is given by

$$F_b = \mu(D + T) + A_{11}\bar{r}_b. \quad (2.5-11)$$

$\mu$  is a positive constant less than one.  $a_{11}$  is a negative constant while  $b_{11}$  is positive.  $f_{11}$ ,  $d_{11}$ , and  $e_{11}$  are also negative constants. The arguments here are the same as those given for the signs of the constant terms in 2.5-10 above.

The total level of desired secondary reserves is given by the sum of 2.5-9, 2.5-10 and 2.5-11. At no time will the actual level of secondary reserves be less than the desired level. If, however, the

banks are unable to make the total amount of loans they wish, actual secondary reserves may be greater than the desired level. Letting  $R_t^{Sa}$  be actual secondary reserves in  $t$ ,

$$R_t^{Sa} = C_{bt} + G_{bt} + F_{bt} + (L_t^S - L_t) \quad (2.5-12)$$

where  $L_t^S$  is the total quantity of loans banks wish to make in  $t$  and  $L_t$  the amount actually lent by the banks in  $t$ . The term in the parentheses in 2.5-12 will be referred to as surplus reserves. It is assumed that all surplus reserves are held in the form of cash so that the banks' actual cash holdings in  $t$  are given by

$$C_{bt}^a = C_{bt} + L_t^S - L_t \quad (2.5-13)$$

when  $L_t^S - L_t$  is positive.

$$C_{bt}^a = C_{bt} \quad (2.5-14)$$

when  $L_t^S = L_t$ . Surplus reserves are assumed to be held in cash rather than securities to reflect their transitory nature. That is, banks feel that such a situation is only temporary and do not wish to switch in and out of securities on a short-run, unpredictable basis.<sup>1</sup>

Bank loans to both the public and firms are made for a period of  $n$  years. Loans made in period  $t$  carry a rate of interest of  $r_{bpt}$  and  $r_{bft}$  respectively. The proceeds to the bank of a loan of  $X$  dollars are  $(1 + r_b)X$ , repaid in  $n$  installments of  $\frac{(1 + r_b)X}{n}$  dollars. Loans to

---

<sup>1</sup>In an attempt to keep the model as simple as possible, we have omitted the Federal Funds market, although it is recognized that this is the sort of situation that created this particular financial market.

both the public and the firms are assumed to be riskless. (Alternatively, one could think of  $r_{bpt}$  and  $r_{bft}$  as representing the net return per dollar lent after default and added collection expenses.)

The aggregate amount banks wish to loan from unborrowed reserves in  $t$  is given by

$$\bar{L}_t^S = \pi(D_t + T_t) + A_{12}\bar{r}_b. \quad (2.5-15)$$

$\pi$  is a positive constant less than one.  $a_{12}$  and  $b_{12}$  are negative constants since increased yields on securities will, ceteris paribus, tend to reduce loans and increase secondary reserves.  $d_{12}$  is a positive constant since increased costs create pressure for shifting from secondary reserves to loans.  $f_{12}$  and  $e_{12}$  are positive reflecting the fact that the increased profitability of loans as interest rates rise will result in increased willingness to lend. Surplus reserves, in period  $t-1$ ,  $(C_{bt-1}^a - C_{bt-1})$ , clearly increase the banks willingness to lend. The amounts the banks wish to loan to the public and the firms,  $\bar{L}_{pt}^{Sb}$ , and  $\bar{L}_{ft}^{Sb}$ , depend on  $\bar{L}_t^S$ , the difference between  $r_{bpt}$  and  $r_{bft}$ , and institutional factors:

$$\bar{L}_{pt}^{Sb} = \ell_p^b \bar{L}_t^S + a_{13}(r_{bpt} - r_{bft}) \quad (2.5-16)$$

$$\bar{L}_{ft}^{Sb} = \ell_f^b \bar{L}_t^S - a_{13}(r_{bpt} - r_{bft}) \quad (2.5-17)$$

where  $\ell_p^b + \ell_f^b = 1$  and  $a_{13}$  is a positive constant. Institutional factors such as the desire to meet the demands of existing customers, unwillingness to loan more or less than some percentages of the total loan portfolio to any one type of borrower, etc., determine the relative sizes of  $\ell_p^b$  and

$\ell_f^b$  as well as the absolute size of  $a_{13}$ . The smaller is  $a_{13}$  the more  $r_{bp}$  and  $r_{bf}$  must differ to induce a wide difference between  $\bar{L}_{pt}^{Sb}$  and  $\bar{L}_{ft}^{Sb}$ .

$\bar{L}_{pt}^{Sb}$  and  $\bar{L}_{ft}^{Sb}$  represent the initial quantity of loans the banks are willing to supply the public and the firms from unborrowed reserves. These figures do not necessarily represent the actual amount of loans made. Let  $\bar{L}_{pt}^{Db}$  and  $\bar{L}_{ft}^{Db}$  represent the quantity of bank loans demanded by the public and the firms in period  $t$ . The actual amount of bank loans made to each sector in period  $t$ ,  $L_{pt}^b$  and  $L_{ft}^b$ , depend on the quantities demanded and the quantities supplied from unborrowed reserves as well as the banks willingness to engage in, and ability to obtain, rediscounting.

When  $\bar{L}_{pt}^{Sb} + \bar{L}_{ft}^{Sb} \geq \bar{L}_{pt}^{Db} + \bar{L}_{ft}^{Db}$ , no rediscounting occurs. In this case the final amounts lent are given by:

$$L_{pt}^b = \bar{L}_{pt}^{Db} \quad (2.5-18)$$

$$L_{ft}^b = \bar{L}_{ft}^{Db}. \quad (2.5-19)$$

Table 1 illustrates this situation.

In this case, even though  $\bar{L}_{pt}^{Db} > \bar{L}_{pt}^{Sb}$ , the entire public loan demand was satisfied by shifting a portion of the initial (and unlent) allocation for loans to firms to public loans. Firms were also able to borrow the amount they wished.

When  $\bar{L}_{pt}^{Sb} + \bar{L}_{ft}^{Sb} < \bar{L}_{pt}^{Db} + \bar{L}_{ft}^{Db}$  the final amounts lent depend on the amount of rediscounting. The banks' total demand for rediscounting is given by

Table 1.  $\bar{L}_{pt}^{Sb} + \bar{L}_{ft}^{Sb} \geq \bar{L}_{pt}^{Db} + \bar{L}_{ft}^{Db}$ 


---

|   |   |                               |
|---|---|-------------------------------|
| $\bar{L}_{pt}^{Sb} = \$100$                     | $\bar{L}_{pt}^{Db} = \$125$                     | $L_{pt}^b = \$125$            |
| $\bar{L}_{ft}^{Sb} = \$200$                     | $\bar{L}_{ft}^{Db} = \$160$                     | $L_{ft}^b = \$160$            |
| $\bar{L}_{pt}^{Sb} + \bar{L}_{ft}^{Sb} = \$300$ | $\bar{L}_{pt}^{Db} + \bar{L}_{ft}^{Db} = \$285$ | $L_{pt}^b + L_{ft}^b = \$285$ |

---

$$d_t^d = \bar{L}_{pt}^{Db} + \bar{L}_{ft}^{Db} - (\bar{L}_{pt}^{Sb} + \bar{L}_{ft}^{Sb}) - d_o \left( \frac{1}{r_{bpt} - r_{dt}} \right) \quad (2.5-20)$$

$$- d_1 \left( \frac{1}{r_{bft} - r_{dt}} \right)$$

It is convenient to decompose 2.5-20 into the bank's demand for rediscounting to make additional loans to the public,  $d_o^d$ , and to make additional loans to firms,  $d_1^d$ .

$$d_{ot}^d = \bar{L}_{pt}^{Db} - \bar{L}_{pt}^{Sb} - (\bar{L}_{ft}^{Sb} - \bar{L}_{ft}^{Db}) - \frac{d_o}{r_{bpt} - r_{dt}} \quad (2.5-21)$$

$$d_{1t}^d = \bar{L}_{ft}^{Db} - \bar{L}_{ft}^{Sb} - (\bar{L}_{pt}^{Sb} - \bar{L}_{pt}^{Db}) - \frac{d_1}{r_{bft} - r_{dt}} \quad (2.5-22)$$

$$\text{where } d_{ot}^d + d_{1t}^d = d_t^d. \quad (2.5-23)$$

The terms  $-(\bar{L}_{ft}^{Sb} - \bar{L}_{ft}^{Db})$  in 2.5-21 and  $-(\bar{L}_{pt}^{Sb} - \bar{L}_{pt}^{Db})$  in 2.5-22 enter these equations only when they are negative. That is, only when the quantity of loans demanded by one sector is smaller than the quantity the banks are willing to lend to that sector. This situation allows the banks to "shift" more funds in amounts equal to  $-(\bar{L}_{ft}^{Sb} - \bar{L}_{ft}^{Db})$  or  $-(\bar{L}_{pt}^{Sb} - \bar{L}_{pt}^{Db})$  to the other sector, thus reducing the banks' demand for rediscounting.



The parameters  $d_0$  and  $d_1$  are positive and assumed to be greater than one. Their size determines how responsive the demand for discounting is to differences between the rate(s) of interest on loans and the rediscount rate. The closer  $r_d$  comes to  $r_{bp}$  ( $r_{bf}$ ) the greater is

$$\frac{d_0}{r_{bpt} - r_{dt}} \left( \frac{d_1}{r_{bft} - r_{dt}} \right) \text{ and the smaller is the amount of discounting}$$

the banks are willing to engage in. Note that the construction of 2.5-21 and 22 imply that the amount of rediscounting will not be sufficient to meet the entire excess demand for loans. The addition of a constant term to these equations would make this possible for certain combinations of the loan rates and the rediscount rate. These terms have been omitted to reflect more strongly the banks' assumed reluctance to engage in rediscounting.

As per our previous assumption, the actual amount of rediscounting is always equal to the amount of discounting demanded; we have

$$d_t \equiv d_t^d = d_{ot}^d + d_{1t}^d. \quad (2.5-24)$$

We shall use the terms  $d_{ot}^d$  and  $d_{1t}^d$  to stand for both the quantities of rediscounting demand as well as the amounts of rediscounting made because of the excess demand for loans from either the public ( $d_{ot}^d$ ) or the firms ( $d_{1t}^d$ ) in period  $t$ . Thus, in the case where  $\bar{L}_{pt}^{Sb} + \bar{L}_{ft}^{Sb} < \bar{L}_{pt}^{Db} + \bar{L}_{ft}^{Db}$ , the actual amounts lent to each sector,  $L_{pt}^b$  and  $L_{ft}^b$ , are given by

$$L_{pt}^b = \min \left\{ \bar{L}_{pt}^{Db}, \bar{L}_{pt}^{Sb} + (\bar{L}_{ft}^{Sb} - \bar{L}_{ft}^{Db}) + d_{ot}^d \right\} \quad (2.5-25)$$

$$L_{ft}^b = \min \left\{ \bar{L}_{ft}^{Db}, \bar{L}_{ft}^{Sb} + (\bar{L}_{pt}^{Sb} - \bar{L}_{pt}^{Db}) + d_{1t}^d \right\}. \quad (2.5-26)$$

Note that the terms  $\bar{L}_{-t}^{Sb} - \bar{L}_{-t}^{Db}$  do not enter 2.5-25 and 26 if they are negative. In the case being considered, only one of these terms may be positive, although both may be negative. In that event, the corresponding rediscount term will be zero. Table 2 illustrates the situation in which one of these terms is positive while the other is negative.

Table 2.  $\bar{L}_f^S - \bar{L}_f^D < 0$ ,  $\bar{L}_p^S - \bar{L}_p^D > 0$

|   |   |                                   |
|---|---|-----------------------------------|
| $\bar{L}_f^S = 100$   | $\bar{L}_f^D = 150$                           | $\bar{L}_f^S - \bar{L}_f^D = -50$ |
| $\bar{L}_p^S = 100$   | $\bar{L}_p^D = 90$                            | $\bar{L}_p^S - \bar{L}_p^D = 10$  |
| <hr/>   |   |                                   |
| $\bar{L}_f^S + \bar{L}_p^S = 200$   | $<$   | $\bar{L}_f^D + \bar{L}_p^D = 240$ |
| <hr/>   |   |                                   |
| $d_o^d = 90 - 100 - (100-150) - \frac{d_o}{r_{bp} - r_d}$                                 |   |                                   |
| $= -10 - 0 - \frac{d_o}{r_{bp} - r_{dt}} < 0 = 0$   |   |                                   |
| $d_1^d = 150 - 100 - (100-90) - \frac{d_1}{r_{bf} - r_d}$                                 |   |                                   |
| $= 50 - 10 - \frac{d_1}{r_{bf} - r_d} = (\text{by assumption on } d_1, r_{bf}, r_d) = 35$ |   |                                   |
| <hr/>   |   |                                   |
| $L_{pt}^b = \min \{90, 100\} + (100-150) + 0$   | $L_{ft}^b = \min \{150-100\} + (100-90) + 35$ |                                   |
| $= \min 90, 100 + 0 = 90 = \bar{L}_p^D$   | $= 100 + 10 + 35 = 145$                       | $\bar{L}_{ft}^{Db}$               |

Equations 2.5-25 and 26 can also be used to express the final amounts lent when  $\bar{L}_f^{Sb} + \bar{L}_p^{Sb} \geq \bar{L}_p^{Db} + \bar{L}_f^{Db}$ , since neither type of borrower can be induced to borrow more than the quantity of loans they initially demand ( $\bar{L}_p^{Db}$  or  $\bar{L}_f^{Db}$ ). Equations 2.5-18 and 19 express this in much simpler form than the more general relationships 2.5-25 and 26.

The rates of interest on bank loans in  $t$  are given by

$$r_{bpt} = r_{bpt-1} + a_p(\bar{L}_{pt-1}^{Db} - \bar{L}_{pt-1}^{Sb}) + b_p(r_{pt-1} - r_{npt-1}) \quad (2.5-27)$$

$$r_{bft} = r_{bft-1} + a_f(\bar{L}_{ft-1}^{Db} - \bar{L}_{ft-1}^{Sb}) + b_f(r_{bft-1} - r_{nft-1}) \quad (2.5-28)$$

where  $a_p$  and  $a_f$  are positive constants. These equations embody the following conceptualization. At the beginning of period  $t$ , banks adjust their rates either up or down depending on whether there was an excess demand ( $\bar{L}_{t-1}^{Db} - \bar{L}_{t-1}^{Sb} > 0$ ) or an excess supply of loans ( $\bar{L}_{t-1}^{Db} - \bar{L}_{t-1}^{Sb} < 0$ ) in the previous period. The amount of the adjustment depends not only on the size of the previous excess supply or demand, but also on the sizes of  $a_p$  and  $a_f$ . Other rates of interest are not explicitly included in 2.5-27 and 28, as their impact on  $r_{bp}$  and  $r_{bf}$  is contained in the  $\bar{L}^{Db}$  and  $\bar{L}^{Sb}$  terms.

Concluding this section we have the simple statement that the banks' assets and liabilities must be equal.

$$T_t + D_t = C_{bt} + G_{bt} + F_{bt} + R_t + \sum_{i=t-n}^t L_i^b - \sum_{i=t-n}^t d_i. \quad (2.5-29)$$

The banks' income statement in period  $t$  is more complex as it must take into account the effects of rediscounting on loan profitability and the possibility of capital gains or losses incurred on government and firms' securities. Let  $\pi_{lp1}$  represent the total stream of profits from loans made in period 1 at maturity. Then, without rediscounting, under our assumption of no default

$$\pi_{lp1} = (1 + r_{bpl}) L_{p1} - L_{p1} = r_{bpl} L_{p1}. \quad (2.5-30)$$

The profit from loans made in period 1 in any one period, again without discounting is simply

$$\frac{(1 + r_{b1}) L_{p1}}{n} - \frac{L_{p1}}{n} = \frac{r_{bpl} L_{p1}}{n}. \quad (2.5-31)$$

The total stream of profits at maturity from loans made in period 1, given that a portion of them are rediscounted in periods after period 1 is given by

$$\pi_{l1} = \frac{m}{n} (1 + r_{b1}) L_1 + d_{m+1,1} + \left[ \left( \frac{n-m}{n} \right) (1 + r_{b1}) \right] \left[ L_1 - \frac{n d_{m+1,1}}{(n-m)(1 - r_{d_{m+1}})(1 + r_{b1})} \right] - L_1 \quad (2.5-32)$$

where  $\frac{m}{n} (1 + r_{b1}) L_1$  gives the repayment of interest and principal received by the bank prior to rediscounting a portion of  $L_1$ ;  $d_{m+1,1}$  is the proceeds of rediscounting a portion of  $L_1$  in period  $m+1$ ;

$(\frac{n-m}{n})(1 + r_{b1}) \left[ L_1 - \frac{nd_{m+1,1}}{(n-m)(1 + rd_{m+1})(1 + r_{b1})} \right] - L_1$  is the repayment

of interest and principal of the portion of  $L_1$  not rediscounted in period  $m+1$ ; and  $L_1$  is simply the face value of the loans made in period 1.

Equation 2.5-32 reduces to

$$\pi_{l1} = r_{b1} L_1 + d_{m+1,1} \left[ 1 - \frac{1}{1 - rd_{m+1}} \right]. \quad (2.5-33)$$

The last term in 2.5-33 will be negative since  $0 < 1 - rd_{m+1} < 1$  and measures the loss of profit on  $L_1$  loans caused by rediscounting a portion of them.

Profit on  $L_1$  loans for the period in which they are rediscounted is given by

$$\begin{aligned} \pi_{l1}^{m+1} = & \left[ L_1 - \frac{nd_{m+1,1}}{(n-m)(1 + r_{b1})(1 - rd_{m+1})} \right] \left( \frac{1 + r_{b1}}{n} \right) - \quad (2.5-34) \\ & \left[ L_1 - \frac{nd_{m+1,1}}{(n-m)(1 + r_{b1})(1 - rd_{m+1})} \right] \left( \frac{1}{n} \right) + d_{m+1,1} \\ & \left[ 1 - \frac{1}{1 - rd_{m+1}} \right] \end{aligned}$$

which reduces to

$$\begin{aligned} \pi_{l1}^{m+1} = & \frac{r_{b1} L_1}{n} + d_{m+1,1} \left[ 1 + \frac{1}{(n-m)(1 + r_{b1})(1 - rd_{m+1})} - \right. \quad (2.5-35) \\ & \left. \frac{1}{(n-m)(1 - rd_{m+1})} - \frac{1}{1 + rd_{m+1}} \right]. \end{aligned}$$

When no rediscounting occurs ( $d_{m+1,1} = 0$ ), 2.5-35 is obviously equivalent to 2.5-30. Equation 2.5-35 serves as the basis for expressing the profit from all loans in any one period. Letting  $\bar{d}_{ji}$  represent the unrepaid principal and interest of a  $j^{\text{th}}$  period loan rediscounted in period  $i$ , we have

$$\pi_{\ell}^{m+1} = \sum_{j=m+1-n}^{m+1} \left[ \frac{r_{bj} \sum_{i=j}^{m+1} (L_j - \sum_{i=m-n}^m \bar{d}_{ji})}{n} + d_{m+1,1} \right] \left( 1 + \frac{1}{(n-m)(1+r_{bj})(1-rd_{m+1})} - \frac{1}{(n-m)(1-rd_{m+1})} - \frac{1}{1-rd_{m+1}} \right) \quad (2.5-36)$$

Profits on loans to the public,  $\pi_{\ell p}^{m+1}$ , is given by using  $r_{bpj}$ ,  $d_{pji}$ , and  $d_{pm+1,j}$  in 2.5-36 while  $\pi_{\ell f}$  is obtained by using the corresponding rate and rediscounting measures for loans to the firms.

Thus,

$$\pi_{\ell}^{m+1} = \pi_{\ell p}^{m+1} + \pi_{\ell f}^{m+1}. \quad (2.5-37)$$

Profit in period  $m+1$  from government securities,  $\pi_g^{m+1}$ , is simply

$$\pi_g^{m+1} = r_{gm+1} G_{bm+1}. \quad (2.5-38)$$

No capital gains or losses are made on governments as a result of the assumptions of one year maturity and no intraperiod trading of the securities by the banks.

Profit in  $m+1$  from firms' securities,  $\pi_f^{m+1}$ , includes both interest and possible capital gains (losses). Thus,

$$\pi_f^{m+1} = \sum_{i=m+1-k}^{m+1} \frac{r_{fi} B_{bfi}}{k} + \sum_{i=m-k}^{m+1} (P_{bfm+1} - P_{bfi}) \quad (2.5-39)$$

$$(F_{bfm+1} = F_{bfi})$$

where  $k$  is the maturity of the firms' bonds and  $F_{bm+1} - F_{bfi}$  does not enter the equation unless it is negative, e.g., unless the banks actually sell period  $i$  bonds in  $m+1$  to actually realize accrued capital gains or losses.

The banks' overall gross profit (before payments to owners, purchase of factors, and payment of interest on time deposits) in  $m+1$ ,  $\pi_b^{m+1}$ , is given by

$$\pi_b^{m+1} = \pi_{lp}^{m+1} + \pi_{lf}^{m+1} + \pi_g^{m+1} + \pi_f^{m+1}. \quad (2.5-40)$$

The only portion of  $\pi_b^{m+1}$  that is not received directly by the public in the form of income in  $m+1$  is the portion used to purchase capital,  $P_{km+1} X_{kbm+1}$ . Thus, the banks' contribution to the public's income in  $m+1$ ,  $Y_b^{m+1}$ , is

$$Y_b^{m+1} = \pi_b^{m+1} - P_{km+1} X_{kbm+1} \quad (2.5-41)$$

### The Nonbank Financial Sector (The Intermediaries)

The nonbank financial sector is assumed to have two major functions. It accepts deposits from the public and the firms and lends to each of these sectors. The insurance function of this sector will not be explicitly recognized. Rather, deposits will be taken to include not only the typical savings deposit at, say, a savings and loan institution but also insurance premiums. Payments on insurance claims will be included in any withdrawals of principal plus interest from the "savings" accounts. For simplicity, it is further assumed that the rate of interest paid on these deposits is the same for both the public and the firms. The deposits in the nonbank financial sector are not assumed to be part of the stock of money. With the submersion of the insurance function the major impact of the nonbank financial sector will be on the banking sector with which it competes both for deposits and for loans.

The following relations describe the aggregate activities of the nonbank financial sector.

$$N = N^S \equiv N^D \quad (2.6-1)$$

The actual level of deposits,  $N$ , is identically equal to the demand by the firms and the public for them, i.e., the supply of deposits is perfectly elastic.

$$N = L_f^n + L_p^n + G_n + D_n + B_n + C_n + T_n \quad (2.6-2)$$



This is simply the balance sheet equation for the nonbank financial sector. Note that 2.6-2 reflects the assumption that the nonbank sector has no direct connection with the banks except to hold demand deposits and time deposits.

$$\bar{L}_n^S = \ell_n N + A_{14} \bar{r}_n \quad (2.6-3)$$

$$G_n^D = g_n N + A_{15} \bar{r}_n \quad (2.6-4)$$

$$D_n^D = d_n N + A_{16} \bar{r}_n \quad (2.6-5)$$

$$F_n^D = b_n N + A_{17} \bar{r}_n \quad (2.6-6)$$

$$C_n^D = c_n N \quad (2.6-7)$$

Equations 2.6-3 through 2.6-7 are the basic decision functions of the nonbank sector. Equation 2.6-3 gives the maximum aggregate amount of loans the sector is willing to make while 2.6-4 to 2.6-7 represent the demand for nonloan assets given that the nonbank sector is able to loan all it desires. Insufficient demand for loans will result in additional holdings of government securities, firms' securities, cash, and demand deposits as specified below.  $\ell_n$ ,  $g_n$ ,  $d_n$ ,  $b_n$ , and  $c_n$  are positive constants while  $r_{np}$  is the rate of interest on loans to the public,  $r_{nf}$  the rate on loans to the firms, and  $r_f$  the rate paid on deposits. All other symbols are as defined previously.

The aggregate amount willing to be lent,  $L_n^S$ , is broken down between the firms and public in a manner analogous to that of the banks.

$$\bar{L}_{pt}^{Sn} = \ell_p^n L_t^{Sn} + a_{18} (r_{npt} - r_{nft}) \quad (2.6-8)$$

$$\bar{L}_{ft}^{Sn} = \ell_f^n L_t^{Sn} - a_{18} (r_{npt} - r_{nft}) \quad (2.6-9)$$

$$\bar{L}_{pt}^{Sn} + \bar{L}_{ft}^{Sn} = L_t^{Sn} \quad (2.6-10)$$

Equations 2.6-8 and 9 are analogous to 2.5-16 and 2.5-17 for the banking sector.  $\ell_p^n$  and  $\ell_f^n$  represent institutional factors influencing the desired distribution of loans between the public and firms.  $\ell_p^n + \ell_f^n = 1$ .  $a_{18}$  is a positive constant whose size determines the importance of interest rate differences in loan distribution.

Adjustments in the initial breakdown occur if either the public's or the firms' demand for loans from the nonbank sector is less than the initial amount willing to be lent to that sector while the demand from the other sector is greater than the initial amount. Thus, if  $L_{np}^D < \bar{L}_{np}^S$  and  $L_{nf}^D > \bar{L}_{nf}^S$  then  $L_{np}$ , the actual amount lent to the public, is equal to  $L_{np}^D$  and  $L_{nf}^S = \min(\bar{L}_{nf}^S + \bar{L}_{np}^S - L_{np}^D, L_n^S - L_{np}^D)$ . Similarly, if  $L_{np}^D > \bar{L}_{np}^S$  and  $L_{nf}^D < \bar{L}_{nf}^S$  then  $L_{np}^S = \min(\bar{L}_{np}^S + \bar{L}_{nf}^S - L_{nf}^D, L_n^S - L_{nf}^D)$ . In either case the amounts actually lent in each sector are given by

$$L_{np} = \min \left\{ L_n^S + (\bar{L}_f^{Sn} - L_f^{Dn}), L_{np}^D \right\} \quad (2.6-11)$$

$$\text{and } L_{nf} = \min \left\{ L_{nf}^S + (\bar{L}_p^{Sn} + L_p^{Dn}), L_{nf}^S \right\}. \quad (2.6-12)$$

The total amount lent,  $L_n$ , is simply the sum of 2.6-11 and 12. In no case can  $L_n$  be larger than  $L_n^S$ . It may however be smaller. In this case the holdings of interest earning assets are increased above the levels given by 2.4-4 through 2.6-7 as given below.

$$L_n^S - L_n = \Delta G_n^D \text{ if } r_g > r_t, r_f \quad (2.6-13)$$

$$L_n^S - L_n = \Delta B_f^D \text{ if } r_f > r_t, r_g \quad (2.6-14)$$

$$L_n^S - L_n = \Delta T_f^D \text{ if } r_t > r_g, r_f \quad (2.6-15)$$

If two of the rates ( $r_g, r_t, r_f$ ) are equal and the third smaller, the increase in demand for those assets will be equal to one half of  $L_n^S - L_n$ . If all three rates are equal the increase in demand for each asset will equal one third of  $L_n^S - L_n$ . Since the supplies of government securities and time deposits are assumed to be perfectly elastic, no complications arise if either 2.6-13 or 15 hold. If 2.6-14 holds it is possible that, since the supply of firms' securities is not perfectly elastic, the nonbank sector may not be able to acquire all the firms' securities it desires. In this case, either government securities or time deposits will be increased in an amount equal to the unsatisfied demand for firms' securities depending on the relative sizes of  $r_g$  and  $r_t$ .

To describe the determination of the various rates of interest associated with the nonbank sector we again introduce the subscript  $t$  to represent time. Note that this subscript has been omitted from the first 15 equations merely for convenience. We have

$$r_{nft+1} = r_{nft} + a_{19}(L_{nf}^{Sn} - L_f^{Dn}) + b_{19}(r_{nf} - r_{bf}) \quad (2.6-16)$$

where  $a_{19} > 0$  and  $b_{19} < 0$ .

$$r_{npt+1} = r_{npt} + a_{20}(L_{np}^S - L_{np}^D) + b_{20}(r_{np} - r_{bp}) \quad (2.6-17)$$

where  $a_{20} > 0$  and  $b_{20} < 0$ .

$$r_{nt+1} = r_{nt} + a_{21}(L_n^S - L_{np}^D - L_{nf}^D) \quad (2.6-18)$$

where  $a_{21}, b_{21} < 0$ .

For the nonbank sector to be in equilibrium the following conditions must be satisfied.

$$r_{nt+i} = r_{nt+i-1} \quad (2.6-19)$$

$$r_{nft+i} = r_{nft+i-1} \quad (2.6-20)$$

$$r_{npt+i} = r_{npt+i-1} \quad (2.6-21)$$

$$L_{nt}^S = L_{nt} \quad (2.6-22)$$

$$F_t = F_t^D \quad (2.6-23)$$

Note that desired holdings of time and demand deposits, government securities, and cash will be satisfied under all conditions.

The intermediaries "balance sheet" was given in Equation 2.6-2. Their "income statement" provides  $Y_n$ , the contribution of the intermediaries to the income of the public in period  $t$ . For simplicity, it is assumed that all loans made by the intermediaries have a maturity of  $n$  years. Since we do not provide for any governmental sources of reserves for the intermediaries (no rediscounting of their loans), the profit on loans in period  $t$ ,  $\pi_{ln}^t$ , is simply

$$\pi_{ln}^t = \sum_{i=t-n-1}^{t-1} \left( \frac{r_{npi}}{n} L_{pi}^n \right) + \sum_{i=t-n-1}^{t-1} \left( \frac{r_{nfi}}{n} L_{fi}^n \right). \quad (2.6-24)$$

Profit on government securities in  $t$ ,  $\pi_{gn}^t$ , is given by

$$\pi_{gn}^t = r_{gt} G_{nt}. \quad (2.6-25)$$

While the profit on firms' securities is

$$\pi_{fn}^t = \sum_{i=m+1-k}^{m+1} \frac{r_{fi} B_{nfi}}{k} + \sum_{i=m-k}^{m+1} (P_{bfm+1} - P_{bfi}) \quad (2.6-26)$$

$$(B_{nfm+1} = B_{nfi})$$

which is equivalent to 2.5-39. The intermediaries gross profit in  $t$ ,  $\pi_n^t$ , is

$$\pi_n^t = \pi_{ln}^t + \pi_{gn}^t + \pi_{fn}^t. \quad (2.6-27)$$

The only portion of  $\pi_n^t$  not received directly by the public is the form of interest payments, labor payments, or dividends is the portion used to purchase the capital good,  $P_{kt} X_{knt}$ . Thus,

$$Y_n^t = \pi_n^t - P_{kt} X_{knt}. \quad (2.6-28)$$

### The Public Sector

The public sector is composed of all individuals in the economy acting in their roles as consumers and suppliers of factors. Only the aggregate behavior of this sector is considered; no attempt is made to distinguish between different individuals or groups of individuals.

The basic relationships for the public sector are given below.

$$D_{pt} = k_1 Y_t + A_{22} \bar{r}_p \quad (2.7-1)$$

$$C_{pt} = k_2 Y_t + A_{23} \bar{r}_p \quad (2.7-2)$$

$$T_{pt} = k_3 Y_t + A_{24} \bar{r}_p \quad (2.7-3)$$

$$C_{nt} = c Y_t + A_{25} \bar{r}_p \quad (2.7-4)$$

$$G_{pt} = g Y_t + A_{26} \bar{r}_p \quad (2.7-5)$$

$$L_{pt}^{Db} = \ell_p^b Y_t + A_{27} \bar{r}_p + (L_{pt-1}^b - L_{pt-1}^{Db}) \quad (2.7-6)$$

$$L_{pt}^{Dn} = \ell_p^n Y_t + A_{28} \bar{r}_p + (L_{pt-1}^n - L_{pt-1}^{Dn}) \quad (2.7-7)$$

$$F_{pt} = f_p Y_t + A_{29} \bar{r}_p \quad (2.7-8)$$

$$N_{pt} = n_p Y_t + A_{30} \bar{r}_p \quad (2.7-9)$$

Equations 2.7-1 through 2.7-9 express the public's demand for demand deposits, currency, time deposits, the consumption good, government securities, loans, and firms' securities in dollar terms.  $P_c$  is not only the price of the consumption good but, since there is by assumption only one composite consumer good, also serves as the consumers price index.

Equations 2.7-1 through 2.7-3 require no further comment. Equation 2.7-4 expresses the dollar value of the public's purchases of the consumer good, e.g.,  $C_{nt} = P_{ct} X_{cpt}$ . It does not include the value of the consumer good transferred to the public sector by the government. Total consumption by the public sector of  $X_c$  in period  $t$  is given by  $C_{nt} + P_{ct} X_{cgt}$  (see the section entitled the government sector).

Equations 2.7-6 and 2.7-7 express the public's demand for loans; their sum is the aggregate demand. It is assumed, for simplicity, that unsatisfied demand for loans from one sector will not increase the quantity of loans the public demands from the other sector in the same time period. Unsatisfied loan demand in  $t$  causes the quantity of loans demanded in the  $t+1$  to increase by an amount equal to the excess demand.

Equations 2.7-5 and 2.7-8 are self explanatory.

Other relations for the public sector include: (1) the definition of the public's gross income,  $\bar{Y}_t$ ,

$$\begin{aligned} \bar{Y}_t = & Y_{gt} + Y_{bt} + Y_{nt} + Y_{ft} + r_{gt}G_{pt} + r_{tt}T_{pt} + \\ & r_{nt}N_{pt} + r_{ft}F_p; \end{aligned} \quad (2.7-10)$$

(2) the definition of disposable income,  $Y_t$

$$Y_t = (1 - t) \bar{Y}_t \quad (2.7-11)$$

(see the section entitled the government sector).

### The Markets

In this section we attempt to tie together some of the loose ends in the previous sections by examining the various markets in the model in some greater detail and in isolation.

#### Currency market

The price of currency is the opportunity cost of holding it, the income sacrificed by not holding a return earning asset. For simplicity

it is assumed that this cost can be represented by the largest of  $r_f$ ,  $r_g$ ,  $r_n$ , and  $r_t$ .<sup>1</sup> Thus, the price of currency for the public is equal to  $1 + \max \{r_f, r_g, r_n, r_t\}$  while for the firms it is  $1 + \max \{r_g, r_n, r_t\}$  since firms do not, by assumption, hold debt instruments of other firms.  $P_c$  for the intermediaries is  $1 + \max \{r_f, r_g, r_t\}$ , while for the banks,  $P_c$  is  $1 + \max \{r_f, r_g\}$  since banks hold neither time deposits nor deposits in intermediaries. If  $P_c$  is the price of currency, we have the typical downward sloping demand curve. Equations 2.3-30, 2.5-9, 2.6-7 and 2.7-4 give the demand for currency explicitly. All variables in these equations except  $\max \{r_f, r_g, r_n, r_t\}$  must be considered fixed when drawing Figure 4. Increases in rates other than the maximum rate shift the demand curves downward, since narrowing the difference between interest rates makes the security with the higher rate relatively less attractive. Increases in  $Y$ ,  $D + T$ , or  $P_c X_c + P_k X_k$  shift the curve outward. Note that the demand

---

<sup>1</sup>Perhaps a more theoretically aesthetic way of viewing  $P_c$  is as follows. The price of currency is the opportunity cost of holding currency rather than a return earning asset, e.g., time deposits, government securities, and firm securities. Let  $O_c$  be this cost. Then  $O_c = O_c(r_f, r_g, r_n, r_t)$  deposit in intermediaries, where the function on the right hand described the return that could be earned on an extra dollar distributed in the same percentage as the present distribution between time deposits, government securities, and firm's securities. For each sector we have:

$$1. \quad O_{cp} = r_t \frac{T_p}{T_p + G_p + B_{fp} + N_p} + r_g \frac{G_p}{T_p + G_p + B_{fp} + N_p} + r_f \frac{B_{fp}}{T_p + G_p + B_{fp} + N_p} + \frac{r_n N_p}{T_p + G_p + B_{fp} + N_p}$$

$$2. \quad O_{cb} = r_t \frac{T_b}{T_p + G_p + B_{fp}} + r_g \frac{G_b}{T_p + G_p + B_{fp}} + r_f \frac{B_{fb}}{T_p + G_p + B_{fp}}$$

(footnote continued on next page).



curve gives the demand for changes in currency holdings. At prices lower than  $P_{co}$  the public (bank, firm or intermediary) wants to increase its currency holdings while at prices above  $P_{co}$ , they want to reduce them. The stock demand for currency can be readily found by combining last period's stock,  $C_{t-1}$ , with the desired change in this period. Note that  $C_{t-1}$  establishes the lower limit for changes in currency holdings during period  $t$  since the stock of currency cannot be negative.

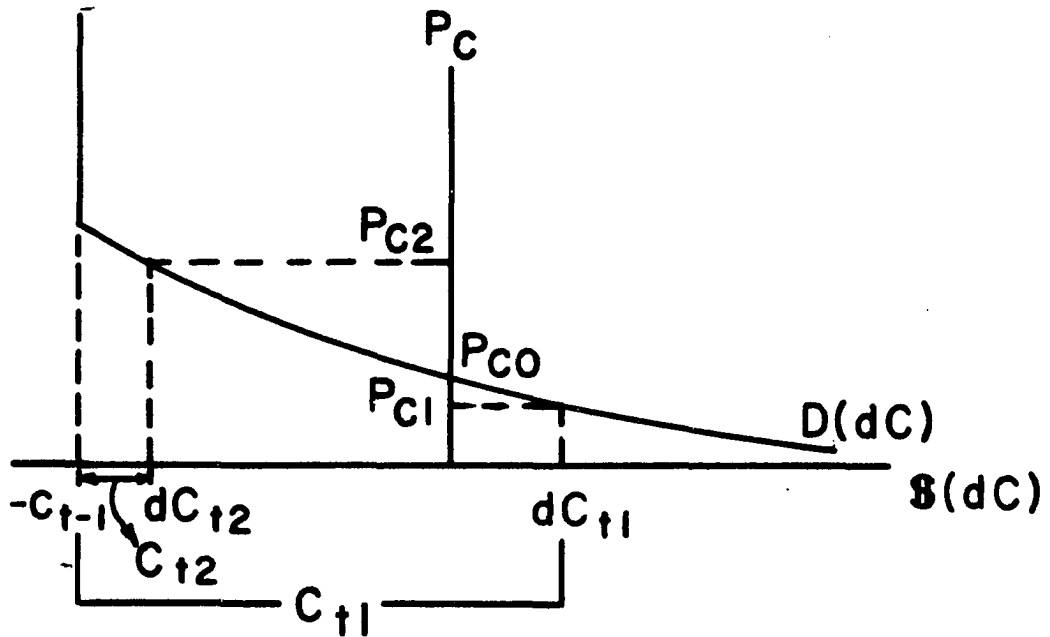


Figure 4. Demand for currency

(footnote continued from previous page)

$$3. \quad O_{cf} = r_t \frac{T_f}{T_f + G_f} + r_g \frac{G_f}{T_f + G_f} + \frac{r_g N_f}{T_f + G_f + N_f}$$

$$4. \quad O_{cn} = \frac{r_t T_n}{T_n + G_n + B_{fn}} + \frac{r_g G_n}{T_n + G_n + B_{fn}} + \frac{r_f B_{fn}}{T_n + G_n + B_{fn}}$$

For simplicity we have chosen not to use this definition of  $O_c$ .

The supply of currency in this model is not independent of the demand for it since by assumption we have the government passively issuing or absorbing currency in the aggregate amount demanded by the public, firms, and banks. Thus, we have

$$D(dC) \equiv S(dC) \quad (2.8-1)$$

for all  $P_c$ . The aggregate demand for currency is obtained by summing the four sectors' demands for currency. Equation 2.8-1 holds both for each sector and for the aggregate. Thus, the currency market is in perpetual equilibrium.

#### The market for demand deposits

The price of demand deposits,  $P_D$ , is defined in the same way as the price of currency, i.e.,  $P_D = 1 + \max \{r_f, r_g, r_n, r_t\}$  for the public, equal to  $1 + \max \{r_g, r_n, r_t\}$  for the firms, and equal to  $1 + \max \{r_f, r_g, r_t\}$  for the intermediaries. The demand for demand deposits can be viewed in the same way as the demands for currency with the obvious exception that in this case there is, again by assumption, no bank demand for demand deposits. Figure 5 is analogous to Figure 4.

The banks are willing to accept any amount of new demand deposits and cannot prevent their withdrawal. Thus, again the supply of demand deposits is not independent of their demand and we have

$$D(dD) \equiv S(dD) \quad (2.8-2)$$

for all  $P_D$ . The aggregate demand is the sum of the public's, firms' and intermediaries' demand and 2.8-2 holds for the aggregate market so that the market for demand deposits is also in perpetual equilibrium.

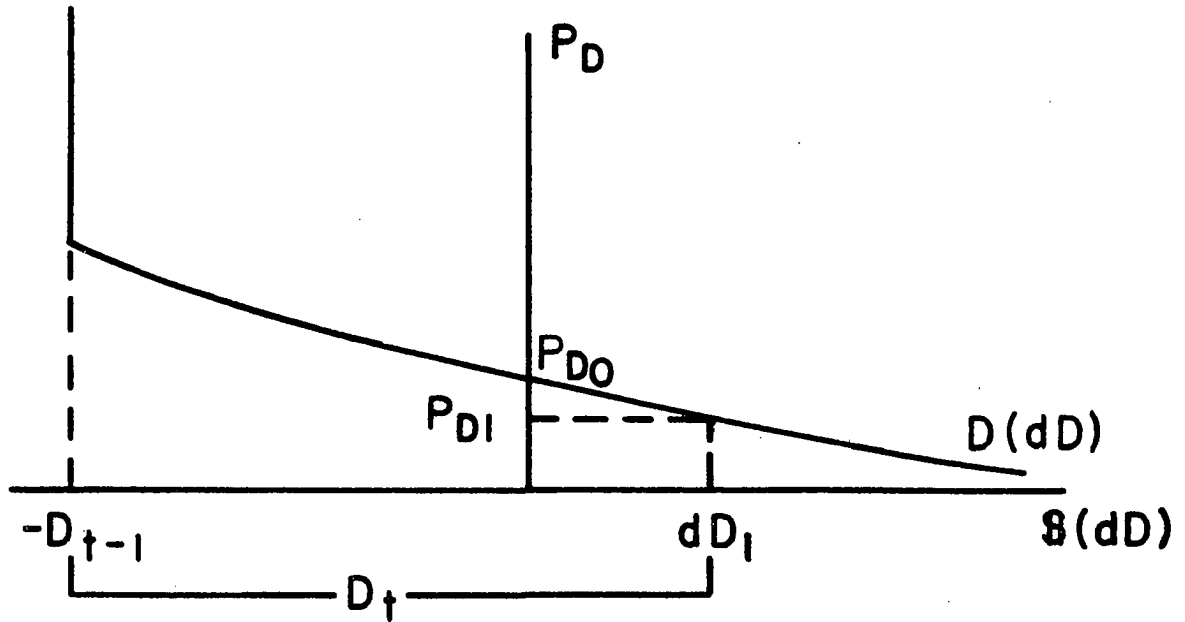


Figure 5. Demand for demand deposits

#### The market for time deposits

The price of time deposits,  $P_t$ , is also an opportunity cost. Since time deposits earn a rate of return, the price of one dollar in time deposits,  $P_t$  is given by

$$P_t = 1 + \max \{ r_f, r_g \} - r_t \quad (2.8-3)$$

for the public by

$$P_t = 1 + r_g - r_t \quad (2.8-4)$$

for the firms, and by

$$P_t = 1 + \max \{ r_f, r_g \} - r_t \quad (2.8-5)$$

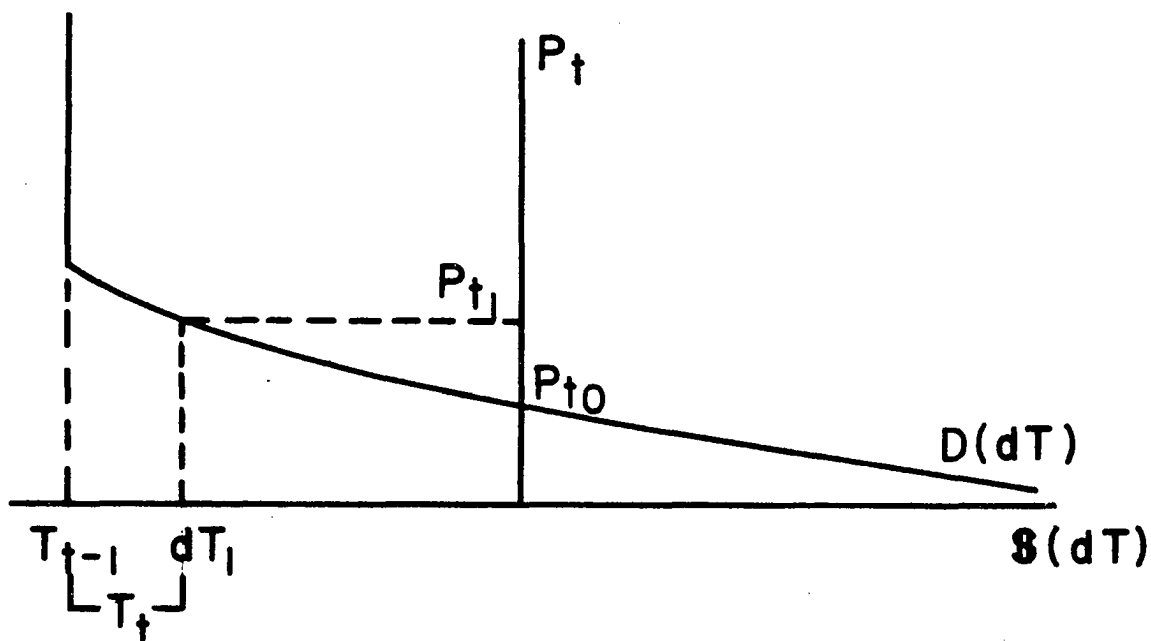


Figure 6. Demand for time deposits

for the intermediaries. The demand for time deposits is also analogous to the demand for currency and is shown in Figure 6. Summing over the public's, firms' and intermediaries' demands again yields the aggregate demand for time deposits. The banks again are assumed to be willing to supply an amount of time deposits and cannot prevent their withdrawal long enough to affect the analysis. Once again then

$$D(dT) \equiv S(dT) \quad (2.8-6)$$

for  $P_t$  and the aggregate market for time deposits is always in equilibrium.

#### The market for government securities

This market is in all respects similar to the ones already described.

We have

$$P_g = 1 + \max \{r_f, r_t\} - r_g \text{ for the public;} \quad (2.8-7)$$

$$P_g = 1 + r_f - r_g \text{ for the banks;} \quad (2.8-8)$$

$$P_g = 1 + \max \{r_n, r_t\} - r_g \text{ for the firms;} \quad (2.8-9)$$

$$P_g = 1 + \max \{r_f, r_t\} - r_g \text{ for the intermediaries.} \quad (2.8-10)$$

Then the demands can be shown by the following figure.

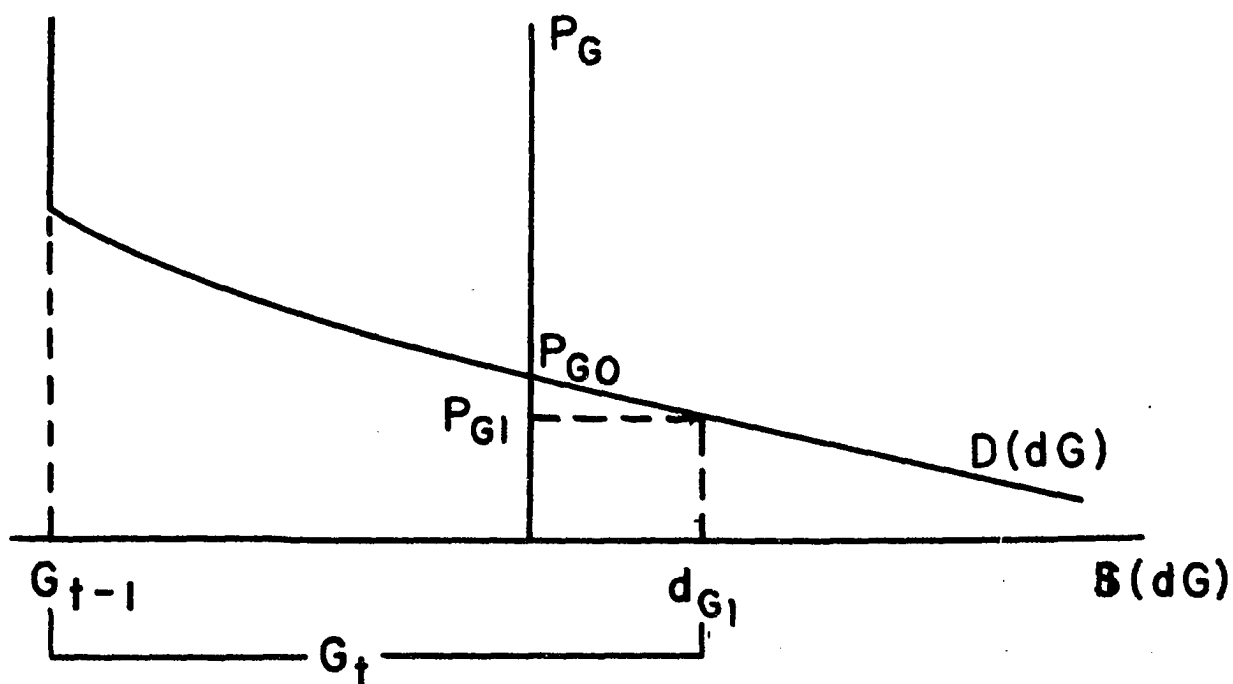


Figure 7. Demand for government securities

Aggregate demand is the sum of the four sectors' demands. The government is a passive supplier-absorber of government securities so that in each market and in the aggregate

$$D(dG) \equiv S(dG) \quad (2.8-11)$$

for all  $P_g$ . The market for government securities is always in equilibrium.

### The market for bank loans

This is the first market to boast a supply function that is independent of demand. The price of bank loans,  $P_\ell$ , is  $1 + r_{bp}$  for the public and  $1 + r_{bf}$  for the firms. The demand for loans is again expressed in terms of desired changes in indebtedness to the banks. Thus, we have in general the situation shown below.

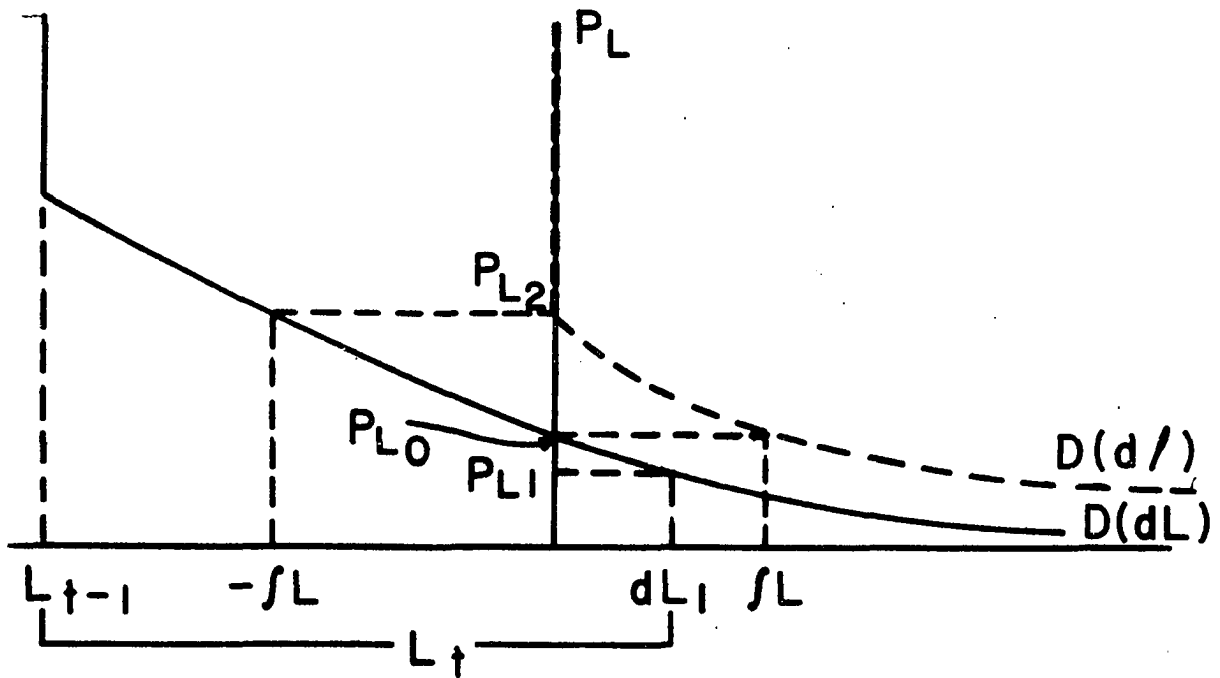


Figure 8. Demand for bank loans

Here  $L_{t-1}$  is the total indebtedness to the bank (unpaid principal plus interest on loans) at the beginning of period  $t$  and  $dL$  represents the change in indebtedness during  $t$ . Note that if  $P_\ell = P_{\ell 0}$  the desired change in indebtedness is zero but that this does not mean that desired

new loans in  $t$  are also zero. When  $P_\ell = P_{\ell 0}$  desired loans in  $t$  are equal to  $\int_0^t \frac{[1 + r_b(r)] L(r) dr}{n}$ , the amount of loan repayments in  $t$ . Thus, desired new loans are zero when  $P_\ell$  and  $P_{\ell 2}$  and the demand for loans is given by  $D(d\ell)$  in Figure 8. A graph like Figure 8 exists for both firms and the public. At any point in time the aggregate quantity of loans the banks are willing to supply is given by the solution to Equation 2.5-15. The supply of loans to each sector is based on the aggregate figure. The discussion in the section on the banking sector can be shown graphically as follows.

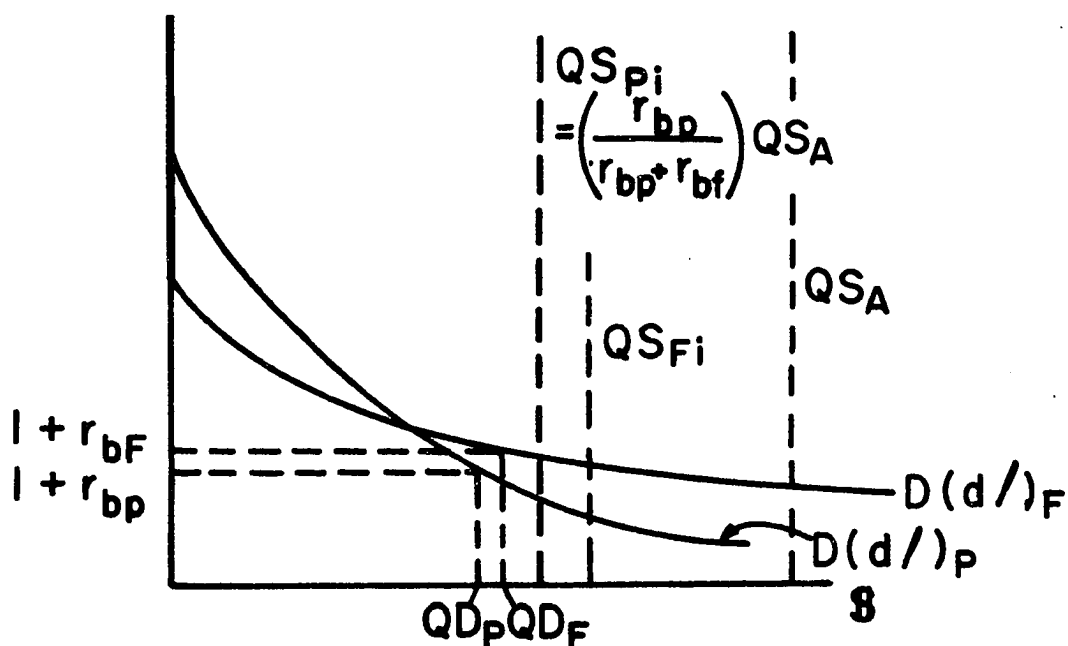


Figure 9. Disequilibrium in bank-loan market

Here  $Q_{spi}$  and  $Q_{sfi}$  represent the initial amounts desired to be loaned to the public and the firms as given by Equations 2.5-16 and 17.

In the situation drawn above excess supply exists in both loan markets and the actual amount of loans made will be  $QD_p + QD_f$ . In the next period both rates will be reduced. An equilibrium situation is shown below. Not only do rates fall, but also the aggregate amount of desired loans by the banks also is reduced.

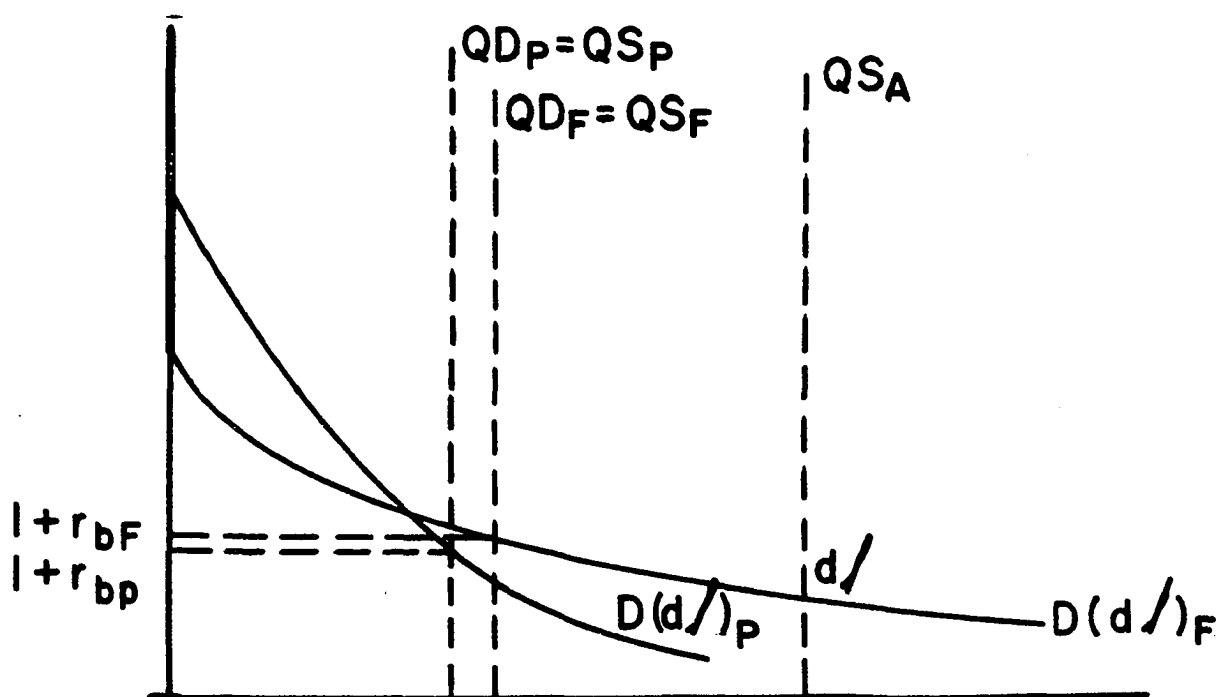


Figure 10. Equilibrium in bank-loan market

Figure 11 is a graphical presentation of the adjustment occurring when there is excess demand in one market and an excess supply in the other. Here  $QS_{ff}$  represents the final quantity of loans made to the firms and the two black arrows,  $ES_f$ , the final total excess supply of loans.

Equilibrium in the loan market clearly requires  $QS_p = QD_r QS_f = QD_f$ , and  $QD_p + QD_s = QS_a$ . Equilibrium is achieved through adjustments of



the rates of interest with its impact both on quantity demanded and quantity supplied.

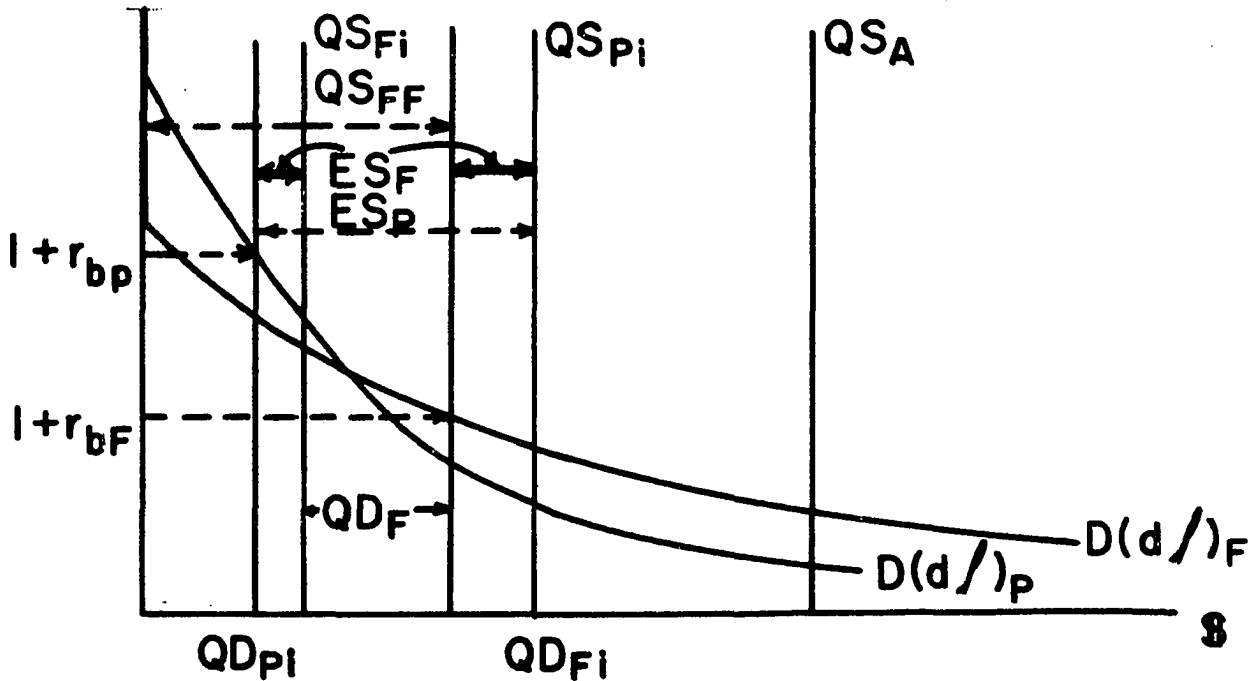


Figure 11. Excess demand and excess supply in bank-loan market

#### The market for intermediary loans

The analysis of the market for intermediary loans is identical to that given above for bank loans and will not be repeated here.

#### The market for the capital good

See the section on production, investment and growth and in particular Figure 2 for a discussion of the market for the capital good.

#### The market for firms' securities

Debt instruments issued by the firms are held by both the public, intermediaries and the banks. The price is again defined in an opportunity

cost sense. Thus,  $P_f$ , the price of firms' securities, is taken to be:

$$P_f = 1 + \max(r_f, r_n, r_t) - r_f \text{ for the public;} \quad (2.8-12)$$

$$P_f = 1 + r_g - r_f \text{ for the bank,} \quad (2.8-13)$$

$$\text{and } P_f = 1 + \max(r_g, r_t) - r_f \text{ for the intermediaries.} \quad (2.8-14)$$

The demands can be shown by Figure 12.

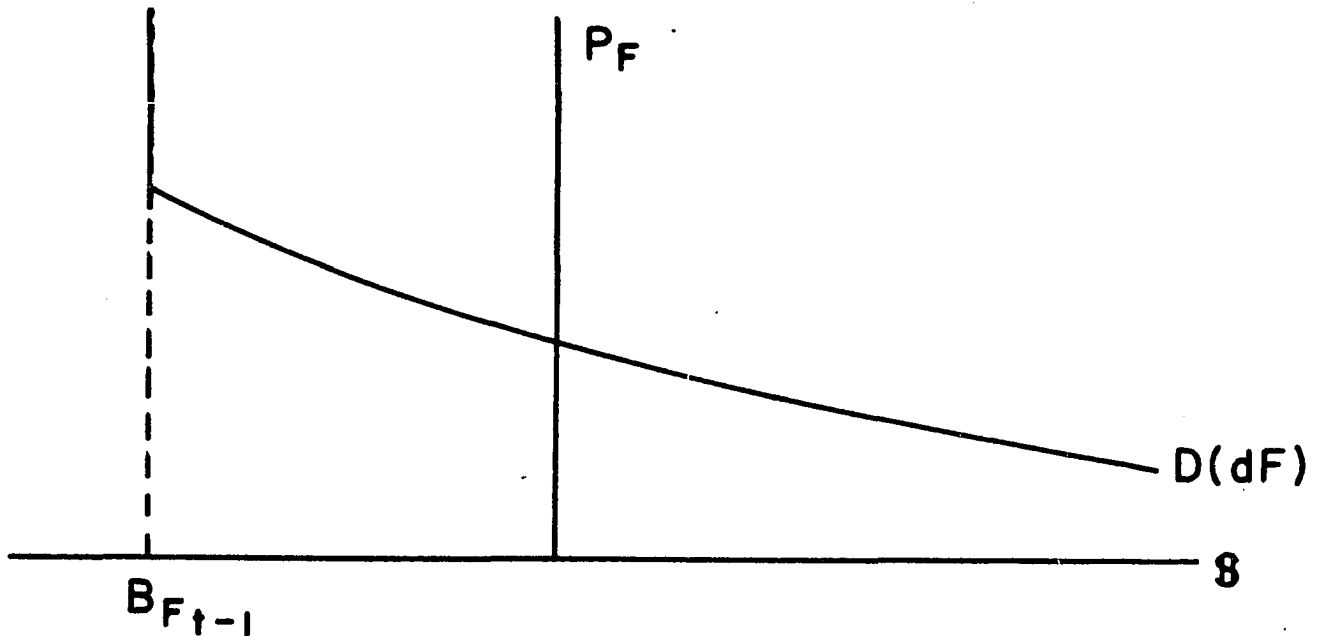


Figure 12. Demand for firms' securities

Figure 12 is completely analogous to Figure 7, (the demand for changes in holdings of government securities). In each period, the supply of securities by the firms is given by the solution of Equation 2.3-4a. The desired change in securities outstanding can be represented by a vertical line. Thus, combining these flow demands and supplies we have in the aggregate Figure 13.

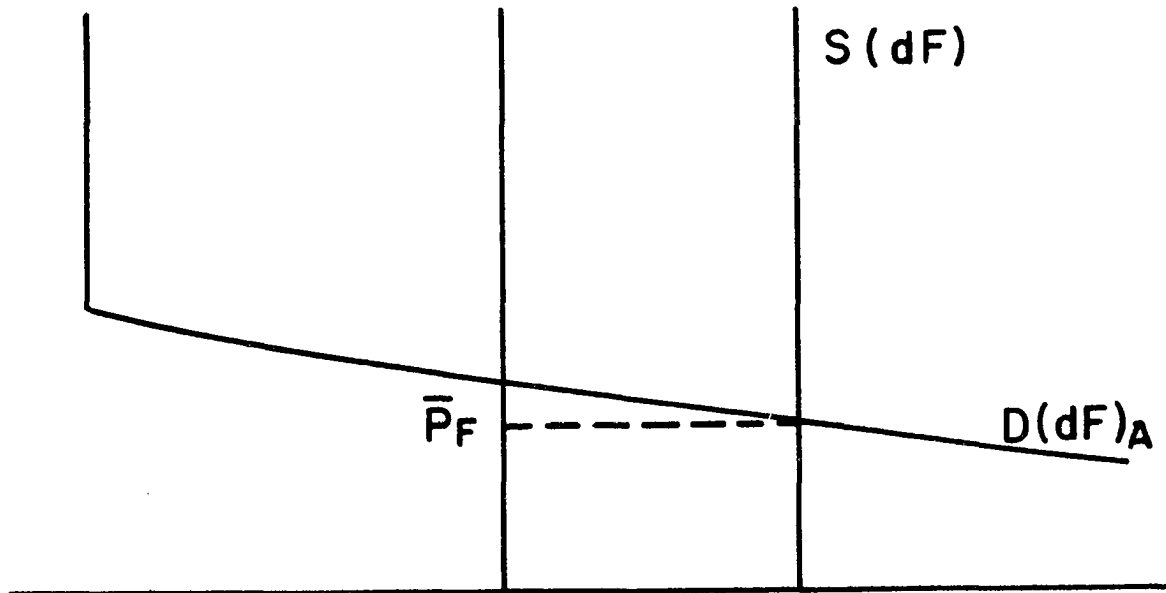


Figure 13. Aggregate demand for firms' securities

A note on aggregate demands

Prices in the financial markets described above have all been framed in terms of opportunity costs. This results in different prices for the same item in different sectors. For example, the price of government securities for the public is assumed to be  $1 + \max \{r_f, r_t\} - r_g$  for the public, but  $1 + \max (r_t, r_n) - r_g$  for the firms. If  $r_f > r_t$ , different prices result. When aggregating sector demands, the price is assumed to be  $\frac{1}{1 + r}$ , where  $r$  represents the rate on the item function and does not contradict the sector prices since there is a one to one relationship between, for example  $\frac{1}{1 + r_g}$  and  $1 + \max \{r_f, r_t\} - r_g$  and  $1 + \max \{r_t, r_n\} - r_g$ .

### Relations of the Model

We simply reproduce the key relationships for each sector here for convenience.<sup>1</sup>

#### Production, investment and growth

1. Aggregate production functions:

$$X_k^a = X_k(L_k, X_{kk}); \quad (2.2-1)$$

$$X_c^a = X_c(L_c, X_{kc}). \quad (2.2-3)$$

2. Transformation functions:

$$X_c = T(X_k); \quad (2.2-5)$$

$$X_{ci}^2 + X_{ki}^2 = \alpha_{ki}^2. \quad (2.2-9)$$

3. Full employment:

$X_i' = (X_{ci}', X_{ki}')$  is a full employment output vector iff

$$X_{ki}' = \sqrt{\alpha_{ki}^2 - X_{ci}'^2}, \quad X_{ki}' \geq 0. \quad (2.2-10)$$

4. Rate of growth of the labor force:

$$\lambda = \lambda\left(\frac{dX_c}{dt}\right). \quad (2.2-13)$$

5. Stock demand for capital:

$$D_k = D_k(P_k, r, \emptyset). \quad (2.2-14)$$

---

<sup>1</sup> See bibliography items 3, 20, 22, 25, 29, 37, 42, 43, 47, 53, 55 and 57 for a more complete discussion of some of the demand and supply functions presented here.

6. Flow demand for capital:

$$dK = nK. \quad (2.2-15)$$

7. Stock supply of capital:

$$S_{kt} = K_t.$$

8. Flow supply of capital:

$$s_k = s_k(P_k). \quad (2.2-16)$$

9. Balanced growth:

$$\frac{\partial X_c}{\partial X_k} kK + \frac{\partial X_c}{\partial L_c} \lambda L = \frac{\partial X_k}{\partial K_k} kK + \frac{\partial X_k}{\partial L_k} \lambda L. \quad (2.2-30)$$

10. Supply of labor:

$$S^\ell = S^\ell(P_\ell, L) \quad (2.2-31)$$

11. Demand for labor:

$$D^\ell = MP_{\ell k} P_k + MP_{\ell c} P X_c + E. \quad (2.2-34)$$

### The firms

1. Desired level of retained earnings:

$$E_t^D = K_t + s[ P_{ct} X_{ct} + P_{kt} X_{kt} ] + \beta I_{nt-1}; \quad (2.3-1)$$

$$E_t^D = f_3(K_t) - \beta(K_{t-1}). \quad (2.3-16)$$

2. Desired level of financing:

$$F_t^D = I_{nt} - I_{nt-1}. \quad (2.3-2)$$

3. Demand for loans:

$$L_{ft}^{Db} = a_1(r_{bt}^f - r_{it}^f) + b_1 L_{ft}^D; \quad (2.3-7)$$

$$L_{ft}^{Dn} = a_2(r_{bt}^f - r_{it}^f) + b_2 L_{ft}^D; \quad (2.3-8)$$

$$L_{ft}^D = \ell_f F_t^D + A_3 \bar{r}_f. \quad (2.3-3a)$$

4. Supply of securities:

$$F_t^S = b_f F_t^D + A_4 \bar{r}_f. \quad (2.3-4a)$$

5. Desired change in retained earnings:

$$\Delta E_t^D = f_4(I_{nt-1}) - \beta(I_{nt-2}). \quad (2.3-19)$$

6. Desired distribution of retained earnings:

$$DA_{ft}^D = (C_{ft}^D, D_{ft}^D, T_{ft}^D, G_{ft}^D, N_{ft}^D). \quad (2.3-23)$$

7. Desired level of cash (currency) balances:

$$\begin{aligned} C_{ft}^D &= a_5 [P_{ct} X_{ct} + P_{kt} X_{kt}]; \\ &= a_5 PX. \end{aligned} \quad (2.3-25)$$

8. Desired level of demand deposits:

$$D_{ft}^D = d_f(PX) + A_6 \bar{r}_f. \quad (2.3-26)$$

9. Desired level of time deposits:

$$T_{ft}^D = t_f(PX) + A_7 \bar{r}_f. \quad (2.3-27)$$

10. Desired level of government securities:

$$G_{ft}^D = g_f(PX) + A_8 \bar{r}_f. \quad (2.3-28)$$

11. Desired level of deposits in intermediaries:

$$N_{ft}^D = n_f(PX) + A_9 \bar{r}_f. \quad (2.3-29)$$

## 12. Contribution of firms to public's income:

$$Y_{ft} = PX_t + r_{gt} G_{ft} + r_{tt} T_{ft} + r_{nt} N_{ft} + L_{ft} + \quad (2.3-35)$$

$$B_{ft} - \Delta(A_{ft}) - \Sigma L_{ft} - \Sigma F_{ft} - P_{kt} X_{kft}.$$

The government

## 1. Tax receipts:

$$T = t\bar{Y}. \quad (2.4-1)$$

## 2. Government spending:

$$T = \bar{r}_g \bar{G} + P_k X_{kg} + P_c X_{cg}. \quad (2.4-2)$$

## 3. Supply and demand for government securities:

$$G^S \equiv G^{Da}. \quad (2.4-7)$$

## 4. Rediscounting:

$$d \equiv d^d(rd). \quad (2.4-8)$$

## 5. Stock of currency:

$$C_t \equiv C_t^{Da}. \quad (2.4-10)$$

## 6. Rate on government securities:

$$r_g = r_{gt-1} - g(G_{t-1}^D - G_{t-2}^D).$$

The banking sector

## 1. Demand for time deposits:

$$T_t = T_t^D \equiv T_{pt}^S + T_{ft}^S + T_{nt}^S. \quad (2.5-2)$$

## 2. The rate of interest on time deposits:

$$r_t = r_{tt-1} + a(\bar{L}_b - L_{bp}^D - L_{bf}^D). \quad (2.5-5)$$

3. Demand for demand deposits:

$$D_t = D_t^D \equiv D_{pt}^S + D_{ft}^S + D_{nt}^S. \quad (2.5-7)$$

4. Level of legal reserves:

$$R_t = r_t (D_t + T_t). \quad (2.5-8)$$

5. Desired currency balances:

$$C_b = \gamma(D + T). \quad (2.5-9)$$

6. Desired level of government securities:

$$G_b = \rho(D + T) + A_{10} \bar{r}_b. \quad (2.5-10)$$

7. Desired level of firms securities:

$$F_b = \mu(D + T) + A_{11} \bar{r}_b. \quad (2.5-11)$$

8. Loan supply:

$$\bar{L}_t^S = \pi(D_t + T_g) + A_{12} \bar{r}_b + (C_{bt-1}^a - C_{bt-1}); \quad (2.5-15)$$

$$\bar{L}_{pt}^{Sb} = \ell_p^b \bar{L}_t^S + a_{13}(r_{bpt} - r_{bft}); \quad (2.5-16)$$

$$\bar{L}_{ft}^{Sb} = \ell_f^b \bar{L}_t^S - a_{13}(r_{bpt} - r_{bft}). \quad (2.5-17)$$

9. Demand for rediscounting:

$$d_t^d = \bar{L}_{pt}^{Db} + \bar{L}_{ft}^{Db} - (\bar{L}_{pt}^{Sb} + \bar{L}_{ft}^{Sb}) - \frac{d_o}{r_{bpt} - r_{dt}} - \quad (2.5-20)$$

$$\frac{d_1}{r_{bft} - r_{dt}};$$

$$d_{ot}^d = \bar{L}_{pt}^{Db} - \bar{L}_{pt}^{Sb} - (\bar{L}_{ft}^{Sb} - \bar{L}_{ft}^{Db}) - \frac{d_o}{r_{bpt} - r_{dt}} \quad (2.5-21)$$



$$d_{1t}^d = \bar{L}_{ft}^{Db} - \bar{L}_{ft}^{Sb} - (\bar{L}_{pt}^{Sb} - \bar{L}_{pt}^{Db}) - \frac{d_1}{r_{bft} - r_{dt}}. \quad (2.5-22)$$

10. Actual amounts lent each sector:

$$L_{pt}^b = \min \left\{ \bar{L}_{pt}^{Db}, \bar{L}_{pt}^{Sb} + (\bar{L}_{ft}^{Sb} - \bar{L}_{ft}^{Db}) + d_{ot}^d \right\}; \quad (2.5-25)$$

$$L_{ft}^b = \min \left\{ \bar{L}_{ft}^{Db}, \bar{L}_{ft}^{Sb} + (\bar{L}_{pt}^{Sb} - \bar{L}_{pt}^{Db}) + d_{1t}^d \right\}. \quad (2.5-26)$$

11. Rates of interest on bank loans:

$$r_{bpt} = r_{bpt-1} + a_p (\bar{L}_{pt-1}^{Db} - \bar{L}_{pt-1}^{Sb}) + b_p (r_{pt-1} - r_{npt-1}); \quad (2.5-27)$$

$$r_{bft} = r_{bft-1} + a_f (\bar{L}_{ft-1}^{Db} - \bar{L}_{ft-1}^{Sb}) + b_f (r_{bft-1} - r_{nft-1}). \quad (2.5-28)$$

12. Contribution to public's income:

$$Y_b^{m+1} = \pi^{m+1} - P_{km+1} X_{kbm+1}. \quad (2.5-41)$$

### The intermediaries

1. The supply of deposits:

$$N = N^S \equiv N^D. \quad (2.6-1)$$

2. Supply of loans:

$$L_n^S = \ell_n^N + A_{14} \bar{r}_n; \quad (2.6-3)$$

$$\bar{L}_{pt}^{Sn} = \ell_p^n L_{nt}^S + a_{18} (r_{npt} - r_{nft}); \quad (2.6-8)$$

$$\bar{L}_{ft}^{Sn} = \ell_p^n \bar{L}_{nt}^S + a_{18} (r_{npt} - r_{nft}). \quad (2.6-9)$$

3. Desired level of government securities:

$$G_n^D = g_n^N + A_{15} \bar{r}_n. \quad (2.6-4)$$

4. Desired level of demand deposits:

$$D_n^D = d_n N + A_{16} \bar{r}_n. \quad (2.6-5)$$

5. Desired level of firm's securities:

$$B_f^D = b_n N + A_{17} \bar{r}_n. \quad (2.6-6)$$

6. Desired currency balances:

$$C_n^D = c_n N. \quad (2.6-7)$$

7. Actual amounts lent:

$$L_{np} = \min \left\{ L_{np}^S + (\bar{L}_f^{Sn} - L_f^{Dn}), L_{np}^D \right\}; \quad (2.6-11)$$

$$L_{nf} = \min \left\{ L_{nf}^S + (\bar{L}_p^{Sn} - L_p^{Dn}), L_{nf}^D \right\}. \quad (2.6-12)$$

8. Rates of interest:

$$r_{nft+1} = r_{nft} + a_{19}(L_{nft}^S - L_{ft}^{Dn}) + b_{19}(r_{nft} - r_{bft}); \quad (2.6-16)$$

$$r_{npt+1} = r_{npt} + a_{20}(L_{npt}^S - L_{npt}^D) + b_{20}(r_{npt} - r_{bpt}); \quad (2.6-17)$$

$$r_{nt+1} = r_{nt} + a_{21}(L_n^S - L_{np}^D - L_{nf}^D). \quad (2.6-18)$$

9. Intermediaries' contribution to public's income:

$$Y_n^t = \pi_n^t - P_{kt} X_{knt}. \quad (2.6-28)$$

### The public sector

1. Desired level of demand deposits:

$$D_{pt} = k_1 Y_t + A_{22} \bar{r}_p. \quad (2.7-1)$$

2. Desired currency balances:

$$C_{pt} = k_2 Y_t + A_{23} \bar{r}_p. \quad (2.7-2)$$

3. Desired level of time deposits:

$$T_{pt} = k_3 Y_t + A_{24} \bar{r}_p. \quad (2.7-3)$$

4. Demand for the consumption good:

$$C_{nt} = c Y_t + A_{25} \bar{r}_p. \quad (2.7-4)$$

5. Desired level of government securities:

$$G_{pt} = g Y_t + A_{26} \bar{r}_p. \quad (2.7-5)$$

6. Demand for bank loans:

$$L_{pt}^{Db} = \ell_p^b Y_t + A_{27} \bar{r}_p. \quad (2.7-6)$$

7. Demand for intermediary loans:

$$L_{pt}^{Dn} = \ell_p^n Y_t + A_{28} \bar{r}_p. \quad (2.7-8)$$

8. Demand for firms' securities

$$F_{pt} = f_p Y_t + A_{29} \bar{r}_p. \quad (2.7-8)$$

9. Demand for deposits in intermediaries:

$$N_{pt} = n_p Y_t + A_{30} \bar{r}_p. \quad (2.7-9)$$

10. Gross income:

$$\begin{aligned} \bar{Y}_t = & Y_{gt} + Y_{bt} + Y_{nt} + Y_{ft} + r_{gt} G_{pt} + r_{nt} N_{pt} + \\ & r_{tt} T_{pt} + r_{ft} F_{pt}. \end{aligned} \quad (2.7-10)$$

11. Disposable income:

$$Y_t = (1 - t) \bar{Y}_t. \quad (2.7-11)$$

## CHAPTER III. SOLUTION WITH A PASSIVE GOVERNMENT

Here we consider the effects of changes in the variables of the model on the stock of money and vice-versa under the assumption that the government is essentially passive. That is, the government does not engage in active monetary or fiscal policy. The reserve requirement,  $r$ , is fixed at  $r^*$ ; the discount rate is fixed at  $r_d^*$ ; and the government is a passive supplier-absorber of government securities.

The solution to the model concentrates on two areas: first, the effects of changes in the variables in the model on the stock of money and second, the effects of changes in the money stock on the variables of the model. In the first case the solution is designed to yield the following expressions:  $\frac{\partial M}{\partial r} \vee r$ ,  $\frac{\partial M}{\partial Y}$ ,  $\frac{\partial M}{\partial P} \vee P$ ,  $\frac{\partial M}{\partial X} \vee X$ , a total of 13 expressions ( $M$  the dependent variable). In the second case, we consider  $\frac{\partial X}{\partial M} \vee X$ ,  $\frac{\partial Y}{\partial M}$ ,  $\frac{\partial P}{\partial M} \vee P$ , and  $\frac{\partial r}{\partial M} \vee r$ , 13 more expressions ( $M$  the independent variable). Due to the complexity of the model to be solved it is not in general true that (for example)  $\frac{\partial M}{\partial P X_c} = 1 / \frac{\partial P_c}{\partial M}$ . Thus, different methods of solution will be used in each case in order to avoid making such (possibly) erroneous assumptions.

## An Expression for the Money Stock

Time deposits and deposits in the intermediaries are not considered to be part of the stock of money. (These could be easily included in the analysis by simply adding  $T$  and  $N$  to Equation 3.1-1 below.) The stock of money in existence in period  $t$ ,  $M_t$ , is thus simply the sum of all currency holdings and all demand deposits:

$$M_t = C_{pt} + C_{bt} + C_{nt} + C_{ft} + D_{pt} + D_{nt} + D_{ft}. \quad (3.1-1)$$

Substituting the appropriate expressions from Chapter II for each of the expressions in 3.1-1 and simplifying, we obtain

$$M = (a_5 + d_f)(PX) + (d_n + c_n)N + (k_1 + k_2)Y + \quad (3.1-2)$$

$$(D + T) + \bar{r}_p(A_{22} + A_{23}) + \bar{r}_f A_6 + \bar{r}_n A_{16}.$$

(The t subscript has been dropped in 3.1-2.) Substituting the expressions for N and D+T from Chapter II yields an expression for M in terms of PX (the value of goods produced), Y (disposable income), the various rates of interest and the parameters of the model.

$$M = PX(a_5 + d_f + n_f d_n + n_f c_n + \gamma d_f + \gamma t_f + \gamma d_n n_f) + \quad (3.1-3)$$

$$Y(d_{np} + c_{np} + k_1 + k_2 + \gamma d_{np} + \gamma k_1 + \gamma k_3) +$$

$$\bar{r}_p[(d_n + c_n + \gamma d_n)A_{30} + (1 + \gamma)A_{22} + A_{23} + \gamma A_{24}] +$$

$$\bar{r}_f[(d_n + c_n + \gamma d_n)A_9 + (1 + \gamma)A_6 + \gamma A_7] +$$

$$\bar{r}_n[(1 + \gamma)A_{16}]$$

Using  $C_1, \dots, C_5$  for the parameter terms in 3.1-4 we have,

$$M = PX C_1 + Y C_2 + \bar{r}_p C_3 + \bar{r}_f C_4 + \bar{r}_n C_5. \quad (3.1-4)$$

This expression for the money stock plays a key role in the solution of the model.

### Solution with M as the Dependent Variable

The solution in this case begins with differentiation of Equation

3.1-4. This yields the following equations:

$$\frac{\partial M}{\partial r_f} = C_1 \left[ \frac{\partial P_c}{\partial r_f} X_c + \frac{\partial X_c}{\partial r_f} P_c + \frac{\partial P_k}{\partial r_f} X_k + \frac{\partial X_k}{\partial r_f} P_k \right] + \quad (3.2-1)$$

$$C_2 \frac{\partial Y}{\partial r_f} + C_3 \frac{\partial \bar{r}_f}{\partial r_f} + C_4 \frac{\partial \bar{r}_p}{\partial r_f} + C_5 \frac{\partial \bar{r}_n}{\partial r_f}$$

.

.

.

$$\frac{\partial M}{\partial r_{np}} = C_1 \left[ \frac{\partial P_c}{\partial r_{np}} X_c + \frac{\partial X_c}{\partial r_{np}} P_c + \frac{\partial P_k}{\partial r_{np}} X_k + \frac{\partial X_k}{\partial r_{np}} P_k \right] \quad (3.2-8)$$

$$+ C_2 \frac{\partial Y}{\partial r_{np}} + C_3 \frac{\partial \bar{r}_f}{\partial r_{np}} + C_4 \frac{\partial \bar{r}_p}{\partial r_{np}} + C_5 \frac{\partial \bar{r}_n}{\partial r_{np}},$$

where the  $\frac{\partial \bar{r}_{f,p,n}}{\partial r_i}$  are vectors of partial derivatives; for example,

$$\frac{\partial \bar{r}_n}{\partial r_f} = (1, \frac{\partial r_g}{\partial r_f}, \frac{\partial r_n}{\partial r_f}, \frac{\partial r_t}{\partial r_f}, 0, 0, \frac{\partial r_{nf}}{\partial r_f}, \frac{\partial r_{np}}{\partial r_f}).$$

$$\frac{\partial M}{\partial Y} = C_1 \left[ \frac{\partial P_c}{\partial Y} X_c + \frac{\partial X_c}{\partial Y} P_c + \frac{\partial P_k}{\partial Y} X_k + \frac{\partial X_k}{\partial Y} P_k \right] + \quad (3.2-9)$$

$$C_2 + C_3 \frac{\partial \bar{r}_f}{\partial Y} + C_4 \frac{\partial \bar{r}_p}{\partial Y} + C_5 \frac{\partial \bar{r}_n}{\partial Y}$$

$$\frac{\partial M}{\partial P_c} = C_1 \left[ X_c + \frac{\partial X_c}{\partial P_c} P_c + \frac{\partial P_k}{\partial P_c} X_k + \frac{\partial X_k}{\partial P_c} P_k \right] + \quad (3.2-10)$$

$$C_2 \frac{\partial Y}{\partial P_c} + C_3 \frac{\partial \bar{r}_f}{\partial P_c} + C_4 \frac{\partial \bar{r}_p}{\partial P_c} + C_5 \frac{\partial \bar{r}_n}{\partial P_c}$$

$$\frac{\partial M}{\partial P_k} = \quad . \quad . \quad . \quad . \quad . \quad . \quad . \quad . \quad (3.2-11)$$

$$\frac{\partial M}{\partial X_c} = C_1 \left[ P_c + \frac{\partial P_c}{\partial X_c} X_c + \frac{\partial P_k}{\partial X_c} X_k + \frac{\partial X_k}{\partial X_c} P_k \right] + \quad (3.2-12)$$

$$C_2 \frac{\partial Y}{\partial X_c} + C_3 \frac{\partial \bar{r}_f}{\partial X_c} + C_4 \frac{\partial \bar{r}_p}{\partial X_c} + C_5 \frac{\partial \bar{r}_n}{\partial X_c}$$

$$\frac{\partial M}{\partial X_k} = \quad . \quad . \quad . \quad . \quad . \quad . \quad . \quad . \quad (3.2-13)$$

This system of 13 equations contains the following unknowns:

1.  $\frac{\partial r_i}{\partial r_j} \forall i, j$  (=1 when  $i = j$ ) (56 unknowns);
2.  $\frac{\partial Y}{\partial r} \forall r$  ( 8 unknowns);
3.  $\frac{\partial P}{\partial r} \forall P, r$  ( 4 unknowns);
4.  $\frac{\partial X}{\partial r} \forall X, r$  ( 4 unknowns);
5.  $\frac{\partial P}{\partial Y} \forall P$  ( 2 unknowns);
6.  $\frac{\partial X}{\partial Y} \forall X$  ( 2 unknowns);

7.  $\frac{\partial r}{\partial Y} \forall r$  ( 8 unknowns);
8.  $\frac{\partial X}{\partial P} \forall X, P$  ( 4 unknowns);
9.  $\frac{\partial P_i}{\partial P_j} \quad i \neq j$  ( 2 unknowns);
10.  $\frac{\partial Y}{\partial P} \forall P$  ( 2 unknowns);
11.  $\frac{\partial r}{\partial P} \forall r, P$  (16 unknowns);
12.  $\frac{\partial X_i}{\partial X_j} \quad i \neq j$  ( 2 unknowns);
13.  $\frac{\partial P}{\partial X} \forall P, X$  ( 4 unknowns);
14.  $\frac{\partial Y}{\partial X} \forall X$  ( 2 unknowns);
15.  $\frac{\partial r}{\partial X} \forall r, X$  (16 unknowns).

Expressing the unknowns in one above in matrix form we have

$$\begin{pmatrix}
 1 & r_{gf} & r_{nf} & r_{tf} & r_{bff} & r_{bpf} & r_{nff} & r_{npf} \\
 r_{fg} & 1 & r_{ng} & r_{tg} & r_{bfg} & r_{npg} & r_{nfg} & r_{npg} \\
 r_{nf} & r_{gn} & 1 & r_{tn} & r_{bf n} & r_{bp n} & r_{nf n} & r_{np n} \\
 r_{ft} & r_{gt} & r_{nt} & 1 & r_{bft} & r_{bpt} & r_{nft} & r_{npt} \\
 r_{fbf} & r_{gbf} & r_{nbf} & r_{tbf} & 1 & r_{bpbf} & r_{nfbf} & r_{npbf} \\
 r_{fbp} & r_{gbp} & r_{nbp} & r_{tbp} & r_{bf bp} & 1 & r_{nf bp} & r_{np bp} \\
 r_{fnf} & r_{gnf} & r_{nnf} & r_{tnf} & r_{bf nf} & r_{bp nf} & 1 & r_{np nf} \\
 r_{fnp} & r_{gnp} & r_{nnp} & r_{tnp} & r_{bf np} & r_{bp np} & r_{nf np} & 1
 \end{pmatrix}$$



where  $r_{ij} = \frac{\partial r_i}{\partial r_j}$ . For example,  $r_{bfnp} = \frac{\partial r_{bf}}{\partial r_{np}}$ . The series of 1's down

the principal diagonal are the  $r_{ii}$ .

Below are the relations describing how the various rates of interest are assumed to change over time:

$$r_{nft} = r_{nft-1} + a_{19}(L_{nft-1}^S - L_{ft}^{Dn}) + b_{19} \quad (2.6-16)$$

$$(r_{nft-1} - r_{bft-1});$$

$$r_{npt} = r_{npt-1} + a_{20}(L_{npt-1}^S - L_{pt-1}^{Dn}) + b_{20} \quad (2.6-17)$$

$$(r_{npt-1} - r_{bpt-1});$$

$$r_{nt} = r_{nt-1} + a_{21}(L_n^S - L_{np}^D - L_{nf}^D); \quad (2.6-18)$$

$$r_t = r_{tt-1} + a(\bar{L}_b - L_{bp}^D - L_{bf}^D); \quad (2.5-5)$$

$$r_{bpt} = r_{bpt-1} + a_p(\bar{L}_{pt-1}^{Db} - \bar{L}_{pt-1}^{Sb}) + b_p \quad (2.5-27)$$

$$(r_{bpt-1} - R_{npt-1});$$

$$r_{bft} = r_{bft-1} + a_f(\bar{L}_{ft-1}^{Db} - \bar{L}_{ft-1}^{Sb}) + b_f \quad (2.5-28)$$

$$(r_{bft-1} - r_{nft-1});$$

$$r_f = r_{ft-1} + f(B_{ft-1}^S - B_{ft-1}^D);$$

$$r_g = r_{gt-1} - g(G_{t-1}^D - G_{t-1}^D).$$

Differentiation of these relations with respect to the  $r$ 's reveals that the terms in the "interest-interaction" matrix above

depend on the effects of changes in the  $r$ 's on the quantity demanded and quantity supplied of loans and of firms securities; the quantity demanded of government securities; on institutional linkages between various rates (such as between the rates charged by different sectors on loans to the public and the rates charged by the banks on loans to the various sectors); and on the sensitivity of rates on deposits to either an excess supply or demand for loans in the previous period (the sizes of  $a_{19}$ ,  $a_{20}$ ,  $a_{21}$ ,  $a$ ,  $a_p$ , etc.). Differentiation of this system would yield a system of 56 equations in the 56 interest-interaction terms and  $\frac{\partial Y}{\partial r} \nabla r$ ,  $\frac{\partial X}{\partial r} \nabla r$ ,  $X$ , and  $\frac{\partial P}{\partial r} \nabla r, P$ . Differentiation with respect to  $Y$  will yield expressions for the  $\frac{\partial r}{\partial Y}$ . Multiplying this result by  $\frac{\partial Y}{\partial P} \nabla P$  will yield expressions for  $\frac{\partial r}{\partial P} \nabla P$ , while multiplying the original result by  $\frac{\partial Y}{\partial X} \nabla X$  gives  $\frac{\partial r}{\partial X} \nabla r, X$ . More of this later.

The expressions for  $\frac{\partial Y}{\partial r}$ ,  $\frac{\partial Y}{\partial P}$ , and  $\frac{\partial Y}{\partial X} \nabla r$  can be obtained by differentiating the expressions for  $Y$ ,

$$Y = PX + \pi_b + \pi_n + r_g G + r_t^T P + r_n^N P + r_f^B f_p - r_{bf}^L b_f - r_{nf}^L n_f$$

with respect to each of the  $r$ 's,  $P$ 's, and  $X$ 's.

The expressions for  $\frac{\partial P}{\partial r}$ ,  $\frac{\partial X}{\partial r}$ ,  $\frac{\partial X}{\partial Y}$ ,  $\frac{\partial P}{\partial Y}$ , and  $\frac{\partial P_i}{\partial P_j}$  can be obtained from the implicit supply and demand functions for  $X_c$  and  $X_k$ . These are

$$S_k = s_k(P_k, P_c, \bar{r}) \quad (3.2-14)$$

$$D_k = d_k(P_k, P_c, \bar{r}) \quad (3.2-15)$$

$$S_c = s_c(P_k, P_c, \bar{r}, Y) \quad (3.2-16)$$

$$D_c = d_c(P_k, P_c, \bar{r}, Y). \quad (3.2-17)$$

The general technique is to differentiate both the supply and demand equations for one good with respect to the  $r$ 's (or  $Y$ ) and then impose the equilibrium condition that  $S_x = D_x$ . For example, differentiating 3.1-14 and 3.1-15 w.r.t.  $r_f$  yields

$$\begin{aligned} \frac{\partial S_k}{\partial r_f} &= \frac{\partial s_k}{\partial P_k} \frac{\partial P_k}{\partial r_f} + \frac{\partial s_k}{\partial P_c} \frac{\partial P_c}{\partial r_f} + \frac{\partial s_k}{\partial \bar{r}} \frac{\partial \bar{r}}{\partial r_f} \\ \frac{\partial D_k}{\partial r_f} &= \frac{\partial d_k}{\partial P_k} \frac{\partial P_k}{\partial r_f} + \frac{\partial d_k}{\partial P_c} \frac{\partial P_c}{\partial r_f} + \frac{\partial d_k}{\partial \bar{r}} \frac{\partial \bar{r}}{\partial r_f}. \end{aligned}$$

At equilibrium  $\frac{\partial S_k}{\partial r_f} dr_f = \frac{\partial D_k}{\partial r_f} dr_f$ , so that

$$\begin{aligned} \left( \frac{\partial s_k}{\partial P_k} \frac{\partial P_k}{\partial r_f} + \frac{\partial s_k}{\partial P_c} \frac{\partial P_c}{\partial r_f} + \frac{\partial s_k}{\partial \bar{r}} \frac{\partial \bar{r}}{\partial r_f} \right) dr_f &= \\ \left( \frac{\partial d_k}{\partial P_k} \frac{\partial P_k}{\partial r_f} + \frac{\partial d_k}{\partial P_c} \frac{\partial P_c}{\partial r_f} + \frac{\partial d_k}{\partial \bar{r}} \frac{\partial \bar{r}}{\partial r_f} \right) dr_f. \end{aligned} \quad (3.2-18)$$

Cancelling  $dr_f$  from both sides, and simplifying

$$\frac{\partial P_k}{\partial r_f} = \frac{\frac{\partial P_c}{\partial r_f} \left( \frac{\partial d_k}{\partial P_c} - \frac{\partial s_k}{\partial P_c} \right) + \frac{\partial \bar{r}}{\partial r_f} \left( \frac{\partial d_k}{\partial \bar{r}} - \frac{\partial s_k}{\partial \bar{r}} \right)}{\frac{\partial s_k}{\partial P_k} - \frac{\partial d_k}{\partial P_k}}. \quad (3.2-19)$$

Differentiating 3.2-16 and 17 with respect to  $r_f$  and following the same

procedure

$$\frac{\partial P_c}{\partial r_f} = \frac{\frac{\partial P_k}{\partial r_f} \left( \frac{\partial d_c}{\partial P_k} - \frac{\partial s_c}{\partial P_k} \right) + \frac{\partial \bar{r}}{\partial r_f} \left( \frac{\partial d_c}{\partial \bar{r}} - \frac{\partial s_k}{\partial \bar{r}} \right)}{\frac{\partial s_c}{\partial P_c} - \frac{\partial d_c}{\partial P_c}} \quad (3.2-20)$$

Equations 3.2-19 and 3.2-20 form a system of two equations that can be solved simultaneously for the unknowns  $\frac{\partial P_k}{\partial r_f}$  and  $\frac{\partial P_c}{\partial r_f}$ . Repeating this procedure will yield  $\frac{\partial P}{\partial r} \forall P, r$ .

The same system (3.1-14 to 17) is used to solve for  $\frac{\partial X}{\partial r}$ . We start with an equilibrium situation where  $s_1$  and  $d_1$  (the K and C subscripts have been omitted since the technique is the same for both). See Figure 14 below.

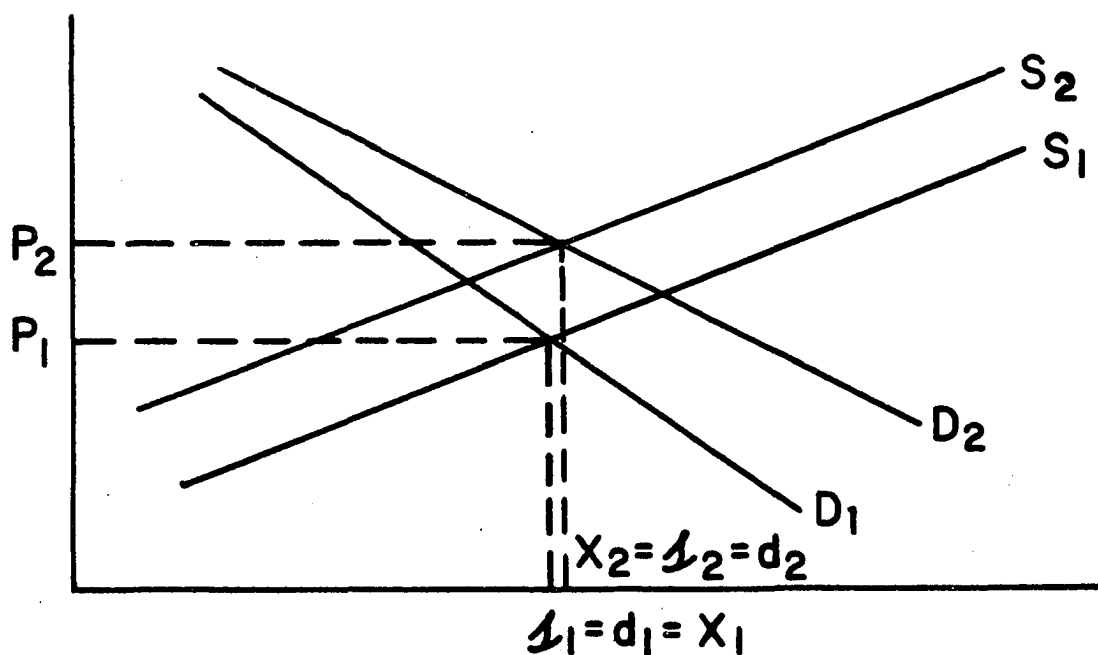


Figure 14. Changes in P and X

We then imagine a change in one of the elements of  $r$  that results in a shift in both the demand and supply curves to  $D_2$  and  $S_2$ . This results in changes in both  $X$  and  $P$ . The expression for  $\frac{\partial P}{\partial X}$  has been developed in the last paragraph. The equilibrium change in  $X$  is obtained in the following manner.

$$\begin{aligned} X_1 &= d_k(P_1, P_c, \bar{r}) = s_k(P_1, P_c, \bar{r}) \\ X_2 &= d_k\left(P_1 + \frac{\partial P}{\partial r} dr, P_c + \frac{\partial P_c}{\partial r} dr, \bar{r} + \frac{\partial \bar{r}}{\partial r} dr\right) \\ &= s_k\left(P_1 + \frac{\partial P}{\partial r} dr, P_c + \frac{\partial P_c}{\partial r} dr, \bar{r} + \frac{\partial \bar{r}}{\partial r} dr\right) \end{aligned}$$

The change in  $X$ , given the change in  $r$  is simply  $X_2 - X_1$  or

$$\begin{aligned} &d_k\left(P_1 + \frac{\partial P}{\partial r} dr, P_c + \frac{\partial P_c}{\partial r} dr, \bar{r} + \frac{\partial \bar{r}}{\partial r} dr\right) - d_k(P_1, P_c, \bar{r}) \\ &\quad (3.2-21) \\ \frac{\Delta X}{\Delta r} &= d_k\left(\frac{\partial P}{\partial r} dr, \frac{\partial P_c}{\partial r} dr, \frac{\partial \bar{r}}{\partial r} dr\right) = s_k\left(\frac{\partial P}{\partial r} dr, \frac{\partial P_c}{\partial r} dr, \frac{\partial \bar{r}}{\partial r} dr\right). \end{aligned}$$

In the limit as  $\Delta r \rightarrow 0$ ,  $\frac{\Delta X}{\Delta r} \rightarrow \frac{\partial X}{\partial r}$  which is still given by either expression in 3.2-21. Repetition of this process yields  $\frac{\partial X}{\partial r} \forall X, r$ .

The expressions for  $\frac{\partial P}{\partial Y}$  and  $\frac{\partial X}{\partial Y}$  are obtained in an analogous manner which will not be repeated here. The same technique is also used to obtain expressions for  $\frac{\partial P_i}{\partial P_j}$ .

The expressions for  $\frac{\partial X_k}{\partial X_c}$  and  $\frac{\partial X_c}{\partial X_k}$  can be obtained directly from the transformation function. These relations obtained by differentiating the transformation function hold only in a situation of full employment. At least than full employment, these rates of change may approach  $+\infty$  if the economy begins to utilize previously unused capital and/or labor.

The expressions for  $\frac{\partial X_i}{\partial P_i}$  are obtained in a manner analogous to the above by differentiation of the supply and demand functions and the imposition of the equilibrium condition that quantity supplied equals quantity demanded.

Before commenting further on the solution with M as the dependent variable we will consider the solution with M as the independent variable because of the close similarity of the technique in this case and that used above.

#### Solution With M As the Independent Variable

The rates of change we wish to develop here measure the effects of changes in the stock of money on the key variables in the model. Thus, we are interested in obtaining expressions for  $\frac{\partial X_k}{\partial M}$ ,  $\frac{\partial X_c}{\partial M}$ ,  $\frac{\partial Y}{\partial M}$ ,  $\frac{\partial P_c}{\partial M}$ ,  $\frac{\partial P_k}{\partial M}$ , and  $\frac{\partial r}{\partial M}$   $\forall r$ . As indicated earlier, it is not sufficient to assume that these rates of change are simply the inverses of those obtained earlier due to the complexity of the model. They may be, but in general it cannot be expected that they will be.

To obtain the expressions for  $\frac{\partial P}{\partial M}$  and  $\frac{\partial X}{\partial M}$  the implicit supply and demand functions 3.2-14 to 17 are again used. Differentiation of 3.2-14 and 14 with respect to M yields

$$\frac{\partial S_k}{\partial M} = \frac{\partial s_k}{\partial P_k} \frac{\partial P_k}{\partial M} + \frac{\partial s_k}{\partial P_c} \frac{\partial P_c}{\partial M} + \frac{\partial s_k}{\partial \bar{r}} \frac{\partial \bar{r}}{\partial M} \quad (3.3-1)$$

$$\frac{\partial D_k}{\partial M} = \frac{\partial d_k}{\partial P_k} \frac{\partial P_k}{\partial M} + \frac{\partial d_k}{\partial P_c} \frac{\partial P_c}{\partial M} + \frac{\partial d_k}{\partial \bar{r}} \frac{\partial \bar{r}}{\partial M} \quad (3.3-2)$$

Again, for equilibrium,  $\frac{\partial S_k}{\partial M} dM = \frac{\partial D_k}{\partial M} dM$  so that, by equating 3.3-1 and 2

and simplifying we obtain

$$\frac{\partial P_k}{\partial M} = \frac{\frac{\partial P_c}{\partial M} \left( \frac{\partial d_k}{\partial P_c} - \frac{\partial s_k}{\partial P_c} \right) + \frac{\partial \bar{r}}{\partial M} \left( \frac{\partial d_k}{\partial \bar{r}} - \frac{\partial s_k}{\partial \bar{r}} \right)}{\frac{\partial s_k}{\partial P_k} + \frac{\partial d_k}{\partial P_k}}. \quad (3.3-3)$$

Proceeding in the same manner we obtain the expression for  $\frac{\partial P_c}{\partial M}$ . This system can then be solved for  $\frac{\partial P_c}{\partial M}$  and  $\frac{\partial P_k}{\partial M}$  in terms of the parameters of the supply and demand functions and  $\frac{\partial \bar{r}}{\partial M}$ .

The expressions for  $\frac{\partial X}{\partial M}$  we obtained in the same manner in which those for  $\frac{\partial X}{\partial r}$  were obtained in section on solution with M as the dependent variable. Thus,

$$\begin{aligned} \frac{\partial X_k}{\partial M} &= d_k \left( \frac{\partial P_k}{\partial M} dM, \frac{\partial P_c}{\partial M} dM, \frac{\partial \bar{r}}{\partial M} dM \right) \\ &= s_k \left( \frac{\partial P_k}{\partial M} dM, \frac{\partial P_c}{\partial M} dM, \frac{\partial \bar{r}}{\partial M} dM \right) \end{aligned} \quad (3.3-4)$$

and similarly for  $\frac{\partial X_c}{\partial M}$ .

The expressions for  $\frac{\partial \bar{r}}{\partial M}$  are obtained from the relations in the section on solution with M as the dependent variable, describing the determination of various rates of interest.

Each of these relations is differentiated with respect to M. In general, the expressions for  $\frac{\partial \bar{r}}{\partial M}$  depend upon the effects of changes in the money stock on the demand and supply of loans, firms securities, and government securities. These effects are, in turn, primarily dependent upon the influences of changes in the money stock on the various rates

of interest. This procedure yields a system of 8 relations  $\frac{\partial r}{\partial M}$ , in the  $\frac{\partial r}{\partial M}$  which can then be solved simultaneously, yielding solutions in terms of  $\frac{\partial Y}{\partial M}$ ,  $\frac{\partial X}{\partial M}$ , and  $\frac{\partial P}{\partial M}$ .

The expression for  $\frac{\partial Y}{\partial M}$  is obtained by differentiating the expression for Y,

$$Y = PX + \pi_b + \pi_n + r_g G + r_t T_p + r_{n_p} N_p + r_{f_{fp}} B_{fp} - r_{bf}^{L_{bf}} - r_{nf}^{L_{nf}},$$

with respect to M, yielding

$$\begin{aligned} \frac{\partial Y}{\partial M} = & \frac{\partial X_c}{\partial M} P_c + \frac{\partial P_c}{\partial M} X_c + \frac{\partial X_k}{\partial M} P_k + \frac{\partial P_k}{\partial M} X_k + \frac{\partial \pi_b}{\partial M} + \\ & \frac{\partial \pi_n}{\partial M} + r_g \frac{\partial G}{\partial M} + \frac{\partial r_g}{\partial M} G_p + \frac{\partial r_t}{\partial M} T_p + \frac{\partial r_p}{\partial M} r_t + \\ & \frac{\partial r_{n_p}}{\partial M} N_p + \frac{\partial N_p}{\partial M} r_n + \frac{\partial r_{f_{fp}}}{\partial M} B_{fp} + \frac{\partial B_{fp}}{\partial M} r_f - \\ & \frac{\partial r_{bf}}{\partial M} L_{bf} + \frac{\partial L_{bf}}{\partial M} r_{bf} + \frac{\partial r_{nf}}{\partial M} L_{nf} + \frac{\partial L_{nf}}{\partial M} r_{nf} \end{aligned} \quad (3.3-5)$$

$$\begin{aligned} \text{where } \frac{\partial \pi_b}{\partial M} = f\left(\frac{\partial Y}{\partial M}, \frac{\partial L_b}{\partial M}, \frac{\partial \bar{r}}{\partial M}\right), \frac{\partial \pi_n}{\partial M} = f_1\left(\frac{\partial Y}{\partial M}, \frac{\partial L_n}{\partial M}, \frac{\partial \bar{r}}{\partial M}\right), \frac{\partial G}{\partial M} = f_3 \\ \left(\frac{\partial Y}{\partial M}, \frac{\partial \bar{r}}{\partial M}\right), \frac{\partial T_p}{\partial M} = f_4\left(\frac{\partial Y}{\partial M}, \frac{\partial \bar{r}}{\partial M}\right), \frac{\partial N_p}{\partial M} = f_5\left(\frac{\partial Y}{\partial M}, \frac{\partial \bar{r}}{\partial M}\right), \frac{\partial B_{fp}}{\partial M} = f_6\left(\frac{\partial Y}{\partial M}, \frac{\partial \bar{r}}{\partial M}\right), \\ \frac{\partial L_{bf}}{\partial M} = f_7\left(\frac{\partial PX}{\partial M}, \frac{\partial L_D^S}{\partial M}, \frac{\partial \bar{r}}{\partial M}\right), \text{ and } \frac{\partial L_{nf}}{\partial M} = f_8\left(\frac{\partial PX}{\partial M}, \frac{\partial L_n^S}{\partial M}, \frac{\partial \bar{r}}{\partial M}\right). \end{aligned}$$



### The "Solution"

The preceding two sections together yield a system of simultaneous equations which could be solved yielding expressions for  $\frac{\partial -}{\partial M}$  and  $\frac{\partial M}{\partial -}$  (where - represents the variables of interest) in terms of the parameters (the elements of  $A_1$ , etc.) alone. No attempt has been made to push the solution to this level. The size and complexity of the resulting expressions would obscure, rather than illuminate their economic meaning and significance. Consequently, we will continue to express these relations in terms of partial derivatives, indicating when necessary what variables they depend on. This procedure increases the ease with which the results can be interpreted.

The key results from the previous sections are reproduced below.

$$\begin{aligned} \frac{\partial M}{\partial r_f} = C_1 \left[ \frac{\partial P_c}{\partial r_f} X_c + \frac{\partial X_c}{\partial r_f} P_c + \frac{\partial P_k}{\partial r_f} X_k + \frac{\partial X_k}{\partial r_f} P_k \right] + \quad (3.2-1) \\ C_2 \frac{\partial Y}{\partial r_f} + C_3 \frac{\partial \bar{r}_f}{\partial r_f} + C_4 \frac{\partial \bar{r}_p}{\partial r_f} + C_5 \frac{\partial \bar{r}_n}{\partial r_f} \end{aligned}$$

$$\begin{aligned} \frac{\partial M}{\partial r_g} = C_1 \left[ \frac{\partial P_c}{\partial r_g} X_c + \frac{\partial X_c}{\partial r_g} P_c + \frac{\partial P_k}{\partial r_g} X_k + \frac{\partial X_k}{\partial r_g} P_k \right] + \quad (3.2-2) \\ C_2 \frac{\partial Y}{\partial r_g} + C_3 \frac{\partial \bar{r}_f}{\partial r_g} + C_4 \frac{\partial \bar{r}_p}{\partial r_g} + C_5 \frac{\partial \bar{r}_n}{\partial r_g} \end{aligned}$$

$$\begin{aligned} \frac{\partial M}{\partial r_n} = C_1 \left[ \frac{\partial P_c}{\partial r_n} X_c + \frac{\partial X_c}{\partial r_n} P_c + \frac{\partial P_k}{\partial r_n} X_k + \frac{\partial X_k}{\partial r_n} P_k \right] + \quad (3.2-3) \\ C_2 \frac{\partial Y}{\partial r_n} + C_3 \frac{\partial \bar{r}_f}{\partial r_n} + C_4 \frac{\partial \bar{r}_p}{\partial r_n} + C_5 \frac{\partial \bar{r}_n}{\partial r_n} \end{aligned}$$

$$\frac{\partial M}{\partial r_t} = C_1 \left[ \frac{\partial P_c}{\partial r_t} X_c + \frac{\partial X_c}{\partial r_t} P_c + \frac{\partial P_k}{\partial r_t} X_k + \frac{\partial X_k}{\partial r_t} P_k \right] + \quad (3.2-4)$$

$$C_2 \frac{\partial Y}{\partial r_t} + C_3 \frac{\partial \bar{r}_f}{\partial r_t} + C_4 \frac{\partial \bar{r}_p}{\partial r_t} + C_5 \frac{\partial \bar{r}_n}{\partial r_t}$$

$$\frac{\partial M}{\partial r_{bf}} = C_1 \left[ \frac{\partial P_c}{\partial r_{bf}} X_c + \frac{\partial X_c}{\partial r_{bf}} P_c + \frac{\partial P_k}{\partial r_{bf}} X_k + \frac{\partial X_k}{\partial r_{bf}} P_k \right] + \quad (3.2-5)$$

$$C_2 \frac{\partial Y}{\partial r_{bf}} + C_3 \frac{\partial \bar{r}_f}{\partial r_{bf}} + C_4 \frac{\partial \bar{r}_p}{\partial r_{bf}} + C_5 \frac{\partial \bar{r}_n}{\partial r_{bf}}$$

$$\frac{\partial M}{\partial r_{bp}} = C_1 \left[ \frac{\partial P_c}{\partial r_{bp}} X_c + \frac{\partial X_c}{\partial r_{bp}} P_c + \frac{\partial P_k}{\partial r_{bp}} X_k + \frac{\partial X_k}{\partial r_{bp}} P_k \right] + \quad (3.2-6)$$

$$C_2 \frac{\partial Y}{\partial r_{bp}} + C_3 \frac{\partial \bar{r}_f}{\partial r_{bp}} + C_4 \frac{\partial \bar{r}_p}{\partial r_{bp}} + C_5 \frac{\partial \bar{r}_n}{\partial r_{bp}}$$

$$\frac{\partial M}{\partial r_{nf}} = C_1 \left[ \frac{\partial P_c}{\partial r_{nf}} X_c + \frac{\partial X_c}{\partial r_{nf}} P_c + \frac{\partial P_k}{\partial r_{nf}} X_k + \frac{\partial X_k}{\partial r_{nf}} P_k \right] + \quad (3.2-7)$$

$$C_2 \frac{\partial Y}{\partial r_{nf}} + C_3 \frac{\partial \bar{r}_f}{\partial r_{nf}} + C_4 \frac{\partial \bar{r}_p}{\partial r_{nf}} + C_5 \frac{\partial \bar{r}_n}{\partial r_{nf}}$$

$$\frac{\partial M}{\partial r_{np}} = C_1 \left[ \frac{\partial P_c}{\partial r_{np}} X_c + \frac{\partial X_c}{\partial r_{np}} P_c + \frac{\partial P_k}{\partial r_{np}} X_k + \frac{\partial X_k}{\partial r_{np}} P_k \right] + \quad (3.2-8)$$

$$C_2 \frac{\partial Y}{\partial r_{np}} + C_3 \frac{\partial \bar{r}_f}{\partial r_{np}} + C_4 \frac{\partial \bar{r}_p}{\partial r_{np}} + C_5 \frac{\partial \bar{r}_n}{\partial r_{np}}$$

$$\frac{\partial M}{\partial Y} = C_1 \left[ \frac{\partial P_c}{\partial Y} X_c + \frac{\partial X_c}{\partial Y} P_c + \frac{\partial P_k}{\partial Y} X_k + \frac{\partial X_k}{\partial Y} P_k \right] + \quad (3.2-9)$$

$$C_2 + C_3 \frac{\partial \bar{r}_f}{\partial Y} + C_4 \frac{\partial \bar{r}_p}{\partial Y} + C_5 \frac{\partial \bar{r}_n}{\partial Y}$$

$$\frac{\partial M}{\partial P_c} = C_1 \left[ X_c + \frac{\partial X_c}{\partial P_c} P_c + \frac{\partial P_k}{\partial P_c} X_k + \frac{\partial X_k}{\partial P_c} P_k \right] + \quad (3.2-10)$$

$$C_2 \frac{\partial Y}{\partial P_c} + C_3 \frac{\partial \bar{r}_f}{\partial P_c} + C_4 \frac{\partial \bar{r}_p}{\partial P_c} + C_5 \frac{\partial \bar{r}_n}{\partial P_c}$$

$$\frac{\partial M}{\partial P_k} = C_1 \left[ \frac{\partial P_c}{\partial P_k} X_c + \frac{\partial X_c}{\partial P_k} P_c + X_k + \frac{\partial X_k}{\partial P_k} P_k \right] + \quad (3.2-11)$$

$$C_2 \frac{\partial Y}{\partial P_k} + C_3 \frac{\partial \bar{r}_f}{\partial P_k} + C_4 \frac{\partial \bar{r}_p}{\partial P_k} + C_5 \frac{\partial \bar{r}_n}{\partial P_k}$$

$$\frac{\partial M}{\partial X_c} = C_1 \left[ \frac{\partial P_c}{\partial X_c} X_c + \frac{\partial P_k}{\partial X_c} X_k + \frac{\partial X_k}{\partial X_c} P_k \right] + \quad (3.2-12)$$

$$C_2 \frac{\partial Y}{\partial X_c} + C_3 \frac{\partial \bar{r}_f}{\partial X_c} + C_4 \frac{\partial \bar{r}_p}{\partial X_c} + C_5 \frac{\partial \bar{r}_n}{\partial X_c}$$

$$\frac{\partial M}{\partial X_k} = C_1 \left[ \frac{\partial P_c}{\partial X_k} X_c + \frac{\partial X_c}{\partial X_k} P_c + \frac{\partial P_k}{\partial X_k} X_k + P_k \right] + \quad (3.2-13)$$

$$C_2 \frac{\partial Y}{\partial X_k} + C_3 \frac{\partial \bar{r}_f}{\partial X_k} + C_4 \frac{\partial \bar{r}_p}{\partial X_k} + C_5 \frac{\partial \bar{r}_n}{\partial X_k}$$

$$\frac{\partial P_k}{\partial M} = \frac{\frac{\partial P_c}{\partial M} \left( \frac{\partial d_k}{\partial P_c} - \frac{\partial s_k}{\partial P_c} \right) + \frac{\partial \bar{r}}{\partial M} \left( \frac{\partial d_k}{\partial \bar{r}} - \frac{\partial s_k}{\partial \bar{r}} \right)}{\frac{\partial s_k}{\partial P_k} - \frac{\partial d_k}{\partial P_k}} \quad (3.3-3)$$

$$\frac{\partial P_c}{\partial M} = \frac{\frac{\partial P_k}{\partial M} \left( \frac{\partial d_c}{\partial P_k} - \frac{\partial s_c}{\partial P_k} \right) + \frac{\partial \bar{r}}{\partial M} \left( \frac{\partial d_c}{\partial \bar{r}} - \frac{\partial s_c}{\partial \bar{r}} \right)}{\frac{\partial s_c}{\partial P_c} - \frac{\partial d_c}{\partial P_c}} \quad (3.3-3a)$$

$$\frac{\partial X_k}{\partial M} = d_k \left( \frac{\partial P_k}{\partial M} dM, \frac{\partial P_c}{\partial M} dM, \frac{\partial \bar{r}}{\partial M} dM \right) \quad (3.3-4)$$

$$= s_k \left( \frac{\partial P_k}{\partial M} dM, \frac{\partial P_c}{\partial M} dM, \frac{\partial \bar{r}}{\partial M} dM \right)$$

$$\frac{\partial X_c}{\partial M} = d_c \left( \frac{\partial P_k}{\partial M}, \frac{\partial P_c}{\partial M}, \frac{\partial \bar{r}}{\partial M}, \frac{\partial Y}{\partial M} \right) \quad (3.3-4a)$$

$$= s_k \left( \frac{\partial P_k}{\partial M}, \frac{\partial P_c}{\partial M}, \frac{\partial \bar{r}}{\partial M}, \frac{\partial Y}{\partial M} \right)$$

$$\frac{\partial Y}{\partial M} = \frac{\partial X_c}{\partial M} P_c + \frac{\partial P_c}{\partial M} X_c + \frac{\partial X_k}{\partial M} P_k + \frac{\partial P_k}{\partial M} X_k + \quad (3.3-5)$$

$$\frac{\partial \pi_b}{\partial M} + \frac{\partial \pi_n}{\partial M} + r_g \frac{\partial G_p}{\partial M} + \frac{\partial r_g}{\partial M} G_p + \frac{\partial r_t}{\partial M} T_p +$$

$$\frac{\partial T_p}{\partial M} r_t + \frac{\partial r_n}{\partial M} N_p + \frac{\partial N_p}{\partial M} r_n + \frac{\partial r_f}{\partial M} B_{fp} +$$

$$\frac{\partial B_{fp}}{\partial M} r_f - \left( \frac{\partial r_{bf}}{\partial M} L_{bf} + \frac{\partial L_{bf}}{\partial M} r_{bf} + \frac{\partial r_{nf}}{\partial M} +$$

$$\frac{\partial L_{nf}}{\partial M} r_{nf} \right)$$

We have indicated previously how the terms on the right-hand side of the relations above can be obtained. We now attempt to examine these relations in more detail and to breathe some economic meaning into them.

The expressions  $\frac{\partial M}{\partial r}$  depend upon the effects of changes in interest rates on prices, real output, income, and all other interest rates (as well as institutional factors which are represented by the values of the constants  $C_i$ ). Consider an increase in one rate of interest,  $r^*$ . The following statements consider the effects on  $P$  from the supply side

only. In general,  $\frac{\partial P}{\partial r^*} > 0$  when  $r^*$  is a cost to the firm ( $r_{bf}$ ,  $r_{nf}$ , and  $r_f$  fall into this category). On the other hand, when  $r^*$  represents a return to the firm ( $r_g$ ,  $r_t$ ,  $r_n$ ), the effects of an increase in  $r^*$  on prices will be less. Conceivably, in some cases,  $\frac{\partial P}{\partial r^*}$  for some  $P$  and  $r^*$  could even be negative. When  $r^*$  represents a rate not directly related to the firms ( $r_{bp}$  or  $r_{np}$ ),  $\frac{\partial P}{\partial r^*}$  will be very near zero. From the demand side, an increase in  $r^*$  represents a potential increase in  $Y$  when  $r^*$  is  $r_g$ ,  $r_n$ ,  $r_t$ , or  $r_f$ . In these cases, increased  $Y$  will also increase the demand for the demand for goods and thus tend to increase  $P$ . When  $r^*$  is either  $r_{bp}$  or  $r_{np}$  the net direct effect on  $Y$  of an increase in  $r^*$  will be zero since increased interest payments will result in increased profit distributions to the owners of the financial sectors. (Indirect effects on  $Y$  may be positive or negative depending on the responsiveness of actual amounts lent to changes in  $r^*$  and the multiplier effects of changes in loans on income.) In general, therefore, we would expect  $\frac{\partial P}{\partial r^*} > 0$ .

We would expect  $\frac{\partial X_k}{\partial r^*} < 0$  when  $r^*$  was a cost of investment ( $r_f$ ,  $r_{bf}$ , or  $r_{nf}$ ), in keeping with standard investment theory. Likewise  $\frac{\partial X_c}{\partial r^*} < 0$  would be expected in this case since  $r^*$  represents a cost to the firm. See Figure 15.

Here  $AC'(> AC^0)$  is the average cost curve after an increase in  $r^*$ . Notice that when we consider the demand side as well, it is necessary to point out that increased  $r^*$  causes an increase in  $Y$  which would tend to increase demand and thus  $X$ . This effect in general would not be large enough to offset the reduction in  $X$  noted earlier since that

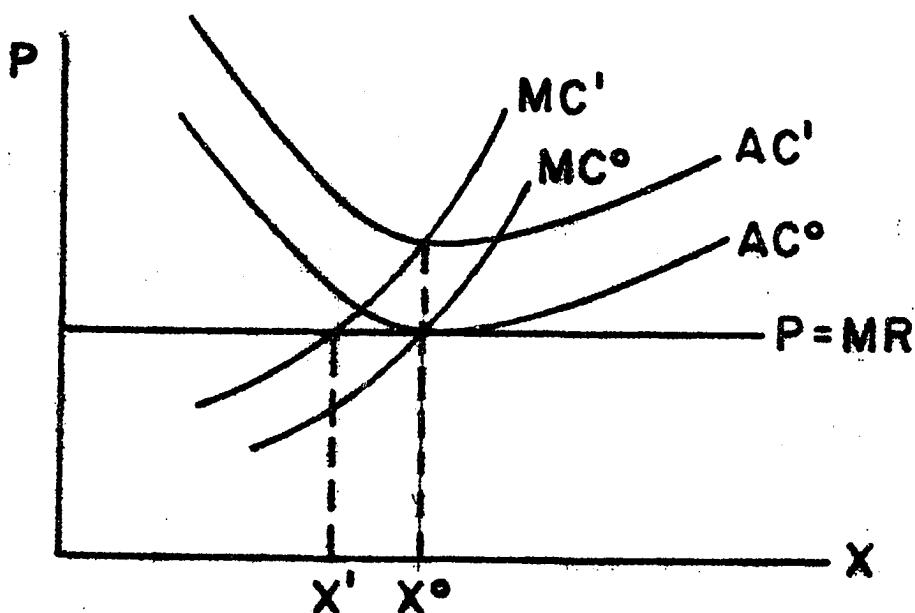


Figure 15.  $\frac{\partial X}{\partial r} < 0$

reduction itself causes  $Y$  to fall, ceteris paribus.

When  $r^*$  is not directly related to the firm ( $r_{bp}$  or  $r_{np}$ ) we assume  $\frac{\partial X}{\partial r^*} = 0$ . When  $r^*$  represents a source of income the firm ( $r_g, r_t, r_n$ ) we expect that  $\frac{\partial X}{\partial r^*} > 0$  (although these effects are probably small).

One straightforward way to think about these effects is to note that increases in these rates may reduce the firms' dependence on financing provided by banks and intermediaries and thus permit greater self-financed expansion.

We have already referred to the effects of changes in  $r^*$  on  $Y$  as a secondary effect in discussing  $\frac{\partial P}{\partial r^*}$  and  $\frac{\partial X}{\partial r^*}$ . It also enters the expressions for  $\frac{\partial M}{\partial r^*}$  directly. The previous discussion will not be repeated here.

The interest-interaction terms  $\frac{\partial r_i}{\partial r_j}$  enter the expressions via the last three terms on the right-hand side of 3.2-1 through 3.2-9. We hypothesize that  $\frac{\partial r_i}{\partial r_j} \geq 0$  for all  $i, j$ . This is equivalent to saying that all interest rates tend to move in the same direction. Clearly, the size of the expression will vary depending on the closeness of the relation between the two rates. For some pairs we would expect this relation to be quite strong (such as  $\frac{\partial r_{bp}}{\partial r_{bf}}$ ) while for others it may be quite weak (such as  $\frac{\partial r_t}{\partial r_{nf}}$ ).

We turn now to a discussion of the constant terms  $C_1$  through  $C_5$ .  $C_1 = (a_5 + d_f + n_f d_n + n_f C_n + \gamma d_f + \gamma t_f + \gamma d_n N_f)$ . Table 3 contains the definitions of these terms and their signs.

Table 3. Terms in  $C_1$

| Term     | Sign  | Definition  |
|----------|-------|---|
| $a_5$    | $> 0$ | Coefficient of PX in firms' demand for currency                   |
| $d_f$    | $> 0$ | Coefficient of PX in firms' demand for demand deposits            |
| $n_f$    | $> 0$ | Coefficient of PX in firms' demand for deposits in intermediaries |
| $t_f$    | $> 0$ | Coefficient of PX in firms' demand for time deposits              |
| $\gamma$ | $> 0$ | Coefficient of D + T in banks' demand for currency                |
| $c_n$    | $> 0$ | Coefficient of N in intermediaries' demand for currency           |
| $d_n$    | $> 0$ | Coefficient of N in intermediaries' demand for demand deposits    |

Clearly,  $C_1 > 0$ . The value of  $C_1$  tells us by how much the money stock increases given a one dollar increase in PX as a result of the firms

increasing their demand for money ( $a_5$  and  $d_f$ ) and their deposits in banks and intermediaries which in turn cause these sectors to increase their demands for money ( $n_f d_n$  - the increase in the intermediaries demand for demand deposits as a result of firms increasing their deposits in the intermediaries, etc.). The last term,  $\gamma d_n n_f$ , is a "third generation" effect--the increase in banks demand for currency caused by an increase in intermediaries demand for demand deposits which was in turn a result of an increase in the firms' demand for deposits in the intermediaries.

$$C_2 = (d_n n_p + c_n n_p + k_1 + k_2 + \gamma d_n n_p + \gamma k_1 + \gamma k_3)$$

Table 4 gives the definitions and signs of the terms in  $C_2$  not in  $C_1$ .

Table 4. Terms of  $C_2$

| Term  | Sign | Definition   |
|-------|------|--|
| $n_p$ | > 0  | Coefficient of Y in public's demand for deposits in intermediaries |
| $k_1$ | > 0  | Coefficient of Y in public's demand for currency                   |
| $k_2$ | > 0  | Coefficient of Y in public's demand for demand deposits            |
| $k_3$ | > 0  | Coefficient of Y in public's demand for time deposits              |

Thus,  $C_2$  is clearly greater than zero. It's interpretation is analogous to that of  $C_1$ , except it measures the effects of an increase in Y on the public's demand for money and the effects of changes in the public's demand on the banks' and intermediaries' demands for money.

$$C_3 = [(d_n + c_n + \gamma d_n) A_{30} + (1 + \gamma) A_{22} + A_{23} + \gamma A_{24}]$$



Table 5 gives the definitions and signs of the new terms in  $C_3$ .

Table 5. Terms of  $C_3$

| Term     | Sign | Definition  |
|----------|------|---|
| $A_{30}$ |      | Coefficient of $\bar{r}_p$ in public's demand for deposits in intermediaries <sup>p</sup> |
| $a_{30}$ | < 0  | Coefficient of $r_f$ in public's demand for deposits in intermediaries                    |
| $b_{30}$ | < 0  | Coefficient of $r_g$ in public's demand for deposits in intermediaries <sup>g</sup>       |
| $c_{30}$ | > 0  | Coefficient of $r_n$ in public's demand for deposits in intermediaries <sup>n</sup>       |
| $d_{30}$ | < 0  | Coefficient of $r_t$ in public's demand for deposits in intermediaries <sup>t</sup>       |
| $f_{30}$ | < 0  | Coefficient of $r_{bp}$ in public's demand for deposits in intermediaries <sup>bp</sup>   |
| $h_{30}$ | < 0  | Coefficient of $r_{np}$ in public's demand for deposits in intermediaries <sup>np</sup>   |
| <hr/>    |      |   |
| $A_{22}$ |      | Coefficient of $\bar{r}_p$ in public's demand for demand deposits                         |
| $a_{22}$ | < 0  | Coefficient of $r_f$ in public's demand for demand deposits                               |
| $b_{22}$ | < 0  | Coefficient of $r_g$ in public's demand for demand deposits                               |
| $c_{22}$ | < 0  | Coefficient of $r_n$ in public's demand for demand deposits                               |
| $d_{22}$ | < 0  | Coefficient of $r_t$ in public's demand for demand deposits                               |
| $f_{22}$ | < 0  | Coefficient of $r_{bp}$ in public's demand for demand deposits                            |
| $h_{22}$ | < 0  | Coefficient of $r_{np}$ in public's demand for demand deposits                            |
| <hr/>    |      |   |
| $A_{23}$ |      | Coefficient of $\bar{r}_p$ in public's demand for currency                                |
| $a_{23}$ | < 0  | Coefficient of $r_f$ in public's demand for currency                                      |
| $b_{23}$ | < 0  | Coefficient of $r_g$ in public's demand for currency                                      |
| $c_{23}$ | < 0  | Coefficient of $r_n$ in public's demand for currency                                      |
| $d_{23}$ | < 0  | Coefficient of $r_t$ in public's demand for currency                                      |
| $f_{23}$ | < 0  | Coefficient of $r_{bp}$ in public's demand for currency                                   |
| $h_{23}$ | < 0  | Coefficient of $r_{np}$ in public's demand for currency                                   |

Table 5. (continued)

| Term     | Sign  | Definition  |
|----------|-------|---|
| $A_{24}$ |       | Coefficient of $\bar{r}_p$ in public's demand for time deposits |
| $a_{24}$ | $< 0$ | Coefficient of $r_f$ in public's demand for time deposits       |
| $b_{24}$ | $< 0$ | Coefficient of $r_g$ in public's demand for time deposits       |
| $c_{24}$ | $< 0$ | Coefficient of $r_n$ in public's demand for time deposits       |
| $d_{24}$ | $> 0$ | Coefficient of $r_t$ in public's demand for time deposits       |
| $f_{24}$ | $< 0$ | Coefficient of $r_{bp}$ in public's demand for time deposits    |
| $h_{24}$ | $< 0$ | Coefficient of $r_{np}$ in public's demand for time deposits    |

Thus, with the exception of  $c_{30}$  and  $d_{24}$ , all terms in  $A_{30}$ ,  $A_{22}$ ,  $A_{23}$ , and  $A_{24}$  are negative since, with the exception of these two terms, they represent the coefficients of rates of interest on competing assets for the public. The interpretation of the actual terms in  $C_3$  is straightforward. For example,  $(d_n + c_n + \gamma d_n) A_{30}$  gives the impact of changes in the public's demand for deposits in intermediaries (resulting from a change in some element of  $\bar{r}_p$ ) on the intermediaries  $[(d_n + c_n) A_{30}]$  and the banks'  $(d_n A_{30})$  demands for money.

$$C_4 = [(d_n + c_n + \gamma d_n) A_9 + (1 + \gamma) A_6 + \gamma A_7]$$

The new terms in  $C_4$  are given in Table 6 below. Once again, all terms but  $c_9$  and  $d_7$  are negative since they represent rates on competing assets for the firms. The interpretation of the actual terms in  $C_4$  is analogous to those of the previous C's.  $[(d_n + c_n + \gamma d_n) A_9]$  for example is the effect of the firms changed demand for deposits in intermediaries on the intermediaries and banks' demands for money.

Table 6. Terms of  $C_4$ 

| Term  | Sign  | Definition   |
|-------|-------|--|
| $A_9$ |       | Coefficient of $\bar{r}_f$ in firms' demand for deposits in intermediaries |
| $a_9$ | $< 0$ | Coefficient of $r_f$ in firms' demand for deposits in intermediaries       |
| $b_9$ | $< 0$ | Coefficient of $r_g$ in firms' demand for deposits in intermediaries       |
| $c_9$ | $> 0$ | Coefficient of $r_n$ in firms' demand for deposits in intermediaries       |
| $d_9$ | $< 0$ | Coefficient of $r_t$ in firms' demand for deposits in intermediaries       |
| $e_9$ | $< 0$ | Coefficient of $r_{bf}$ in firms' demand for deposits in intermediaries    |
| $g_9$ | $< 0$ | Coefficient of $r_{nf}$ in firms' demand for deposits in intermediaries    |
| <hr/> |       |  |
| $A_6$ |       | Coefficient of $\bar{r}_f$ in firms' demand for demand deposits            |
| $a_6$ | $< 0$ | Coefficient of $r_f$ in firms' demand for demand deposits                  |
| $b_6$ | $< 0$ | Coefficient of $r_g$ in firms' demand for demand deposits                  |
| $c_6$ | $< 0$ | Coefficient of $r_n$ in firms' demand for demand deposits                  |
| $d_6$ | $< 0$ | Coefficient of $r_t$ in firms' demand for demand deposits                  |
| $e_6$ | $< 0$ | Coefficient of $r_{bf}$ in firms' demand for demand deposits               |
| $g_6$ | $< 0$ | Coefficient of $r_{nf}$ in firms' demand for demand deposits               |
| <hr/> |       |  |
| $A_7$ |       | Coefficient of $\bar{r}_f$ in firms' demand for time deposits              |
| $a_7$ | $< 0$ | Coefficient of $r_f$ in firms' demand for time deposits                    |
| $b_7$ | $< 0$ | Coefficient of $r_g$ in firms' demand for time deposits                    |
| $c_7$ | $< 0$ | Coefficient of $r_n$ in firms' demand for time deposits                    |
| $d_7$ | $> 0$ | Coefficient of $r_t$ in firms' demand for time deposits                    |
| $e_7$ | $< 0$ | Coefficient of $r_{bf}$ in firms' demand for time deposits                 |
| $g_7$ | $< 0$ | Coefficient of $r_{nf}$ in firms' demand for time deposits                 |

$$C_5 = (1 + \gamma) A_{16}$$

$A_{16}$  is the coefficient of  $\bar{r}_n$  in the intermediaries' demand for demand deposits. Table 7 gives the signs and definitions of the elements of  $A_{16}$ .

Table 7. Elements of  $A_{16}$  ( $C_5$ )

| Term     | Sign  | Definition  |
|----------|-------|---|
| $a_{16}$ | $< 0$ | Coefficient of $r_f$ in intermediaries' demand for demand deposits    |
| $b_{16}$ | $< 0$ | Coefficient of $r_g$ in intermediaries' demand for demand deposits    |
| $c_{16}$ | $< 0$ | Coefficient of $r_n$ in intermediaries' demand for demand deposits    |
| $d_{16}$ | $< 0$ | Coefficient of $r_t$ in intermediaries' demand for demand deposits    |
| $g_{16}$ | $< 0$ | Coefficient of $r_{nf}$ in intermediaries' demand for demand deposits |
| $h_{16}$ | $< 0$ | Coefficient of $r_{np}$ in intermediaries' demand for demand deposits |

Thus,  $C_5$  indicates the effects of changes in an element of  $\bar{r}_n$  on the intermediaries' demand for demand deposits as well as the secondary effect on the banks' demand for currency.

The preceding discussion and descriptions provide us with the necessary material to interpret any of the expressions for  $\frac{\partial M}{\partial r^*}$  for any  $r^*$ .

The expression for  $\frac{\partial M}{\partial Y}$  contains the same five constants,  $C_1$  through  $C_5$ , described above. Both the derivatives of prices and physical outputs with respect to income will be positive for obvious reasons. The signs of  $\frac{\partial r^*}{\partial Y}$  are given below in Table 8.

Table 8.  $\frac{\partial r}{\partial Y}^*$ 

| Term                              | Sign                                   | Term                                 | Sign                                   |
|-----------------------------------|--|--------------------------------------|--|
| $\frac{\partial r_f}{\partial Y}$ | $\begin{matrix} > \\ < \end{matrix} 0$ | $\frac{\partial r_{bf}}{\partial Y}$ | $\begin{matrix} > \\ < \end{matrix} 0$ |
| $\frac{\partial r_g}{\partial Y}$ | $< 0$                                  | $\frac{\partial r_{bp}}{\partial Y}$ | $\begin{matrix} > \\ < \end{matrix} 0$ |
| $\frac{\partial r_n}{\partial Y}$ | $\begin{matrix} > \\ < \end{matrix} 0$ | $\frac{\partial r_{nf}}{\partial Y}$ | $\begin{matrix} > \\ < \end{matrix} 0$ |
| $\frac{\partial r_t}{\partial Y}$ | $\begin{matrix} < \\ > \end{matrix} 0$ | $\frac{\partial r_{np}}{\partial Y}$ | $\begin{matrix} > \\ < \end{matrix} 0$ |

The only sign in Table 8 that can be specified exactly without making further assumptions is that of  $\partial r_g / \partial Y$  which will be negative as increased demand for government securities will bid their price up and the rate down. The signs of the other terms depend on the relation between the impact of changes in income on the demand for loans and firms' securities and the supply of loans and securities. In a strictly partial equilibrium sense, we can say that if the impact on these demands is greater than on the corresponding supplies, the corresponding partial derivative will be positive. If the impact on the supplies is larger than on the demand, the derivative will be negative. The question of the relative sizes of these effects is not one that can be answered without specifying the actual values of the parameters in the appropriate demand and supply functions. Thus, the answer must be provided either by assumption on the parameters (which would be only a tentative answer

subject to empirical verification) which we have, and will avoid, or by empirical estimation. We could (and will) argue, however, that, since it is to be expected that increases in income will tend to increase the money stock, if some of the  $\frac{\partial r}{\partial Y}$  are in fact negative, they cannot be so negative to cause the entire expression for  $\frac{\partial M}{\partial Y}$  to be negative.

The expressions for  $\frac{\partial M}{\partial P}$  also contain  $C_1$  through  $C_5$  as well as the partial derivatives of  $X_c$ ,  $X_k$ ,  $P_c$ ,  $P_k$ ,  $Y$ , and the  $r$ 's with respect to the  $P$ 's. The terms  $\frac{\partial X_c}{\partial P_c}$  and  $\frac{\partial X_k}{\partial P_k}$  are positive under our assumptions of perfect competition. See Figure 16 below.

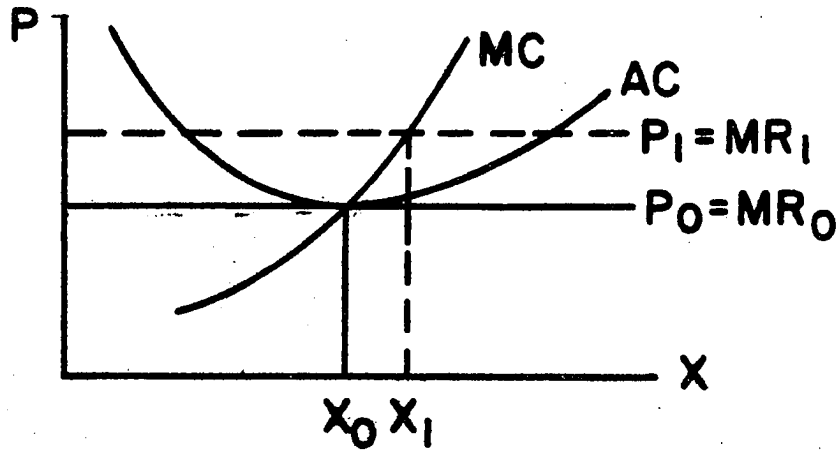


Figure 16.  $\frac{\partial X_c}{\partial P_c}$  and  $\frac{\partial X_k}{\partial P_k}$

$\frac{\partial Y}{\partial P_k}$  and  $\frac{\partial Y}{\partial P_c}$  are both positive because of the direct relation between  $PX$  and  $Y$  and since the terms  $\frac{\partial X_c}{\partial P_c}$  and  $\frac{\partial X_k}{\partial P_k}$  are (as we have argued earlier) positive. The terms  $\frac{\partial P_c}{\partial P_k}$  and  $\frac{\partial P_k}{\partial P_c}$  are assumed to be positive in deference to the widely observed phenomena that prices tend to move together. Table 9 lists the remaining terms in the  $\frac{\partial M}{\partial P}$  and their signs.

Table 9. Terms of  $\frac{\partial M}{\partial P}$ 

| Term                                   | Sign        | Term                                   | Sign        |
|--|-------------|--|-------------|
| $\frac{\partial r_f}{\partial P_c}$    | > 0         | $\frac{\partial r_f}{\partial P_k}$    | > 0         |
| $\frac{\partial r_g}{\partial P_c}$    | $\approx 0$ | $\frac{\partial r_g}{\partial P_k}$    | $\approx 0$ |
| $\frac{\partial r_n}{\partial P_c}$    | $\approx 0$ | $\frac{\partial r_n}{\partial P_k}$    | $\approx 0$ |
| $\frac{\partial r_t}{\partial P_c}$    | $\approx 0$ | $\frac{\partial r_t}{\partial P_k}$    | $\approx 0$ |
| $\frac{\partial r_{bf}}{\partial P_c}$ | > 0         | $\frac{\partial r_{bf}}{\partial P_k}$ | > 0         |
| $\frac{\partial r_{bn}}{\partial P_c}$ | $\approx 0$ | $\frac{\partial r_{bn}}{\partial P_k}$ | $\approx 0$ |
| $\frac{\partial r_{nf}}{\partial P_c}$ | > 0         | $\frac{\partial r_{nf}}{\partial P_k}$ | > 0         |
| $\frac{\partial r_{np}}{\partial P_c}$ | $\approx 0$ | $\frac{\partial r_{np}}{\partial P_k}$ | $\approx 0$ |

The six terms whose signs are greater than zero simply reflect the fact that as prices increase, so does output thus increasing the firms' demands for both internal and external financing and thus, ceteris paribus, the rates of interest paid on the various types of financing. The notation " $\approx 0$ " is used for the other terms to indicate that they

are "nearly" zero, but must be positive since by our assumption on the interest-interaction terms, all interest rates move together. The causality may, however, not run directly from a change in  $P_c$  or  $P_k$  to a change in the particular interest rate being considered.

Thus, the terms  $\frac{\partial M}{\partial P_c}$  and  $\frac{\partial M}{\partial P_k}$  are positive once the assumption (not a very startling one) is granted that  $\frac{\partial X_k}{\partial P_k} P_k > \left| \frac{\partial X_k}{\partial P_c} \right| P_k$  and  $\frac{\partial X_c}{\partial P_c} P_c > \left| \frac{\partial X_c}{\partial P_k} \right| P_c$ .

$\frac{\partial M}{\partial X_c}$  and  $\frac{\partial M}{\partial X_k}$  are the last of our key relations in which the five constants  $C_1$  through  $C_5$  enter. With the exception of the terms

$\frac{\partial X_c}{\partial X_k}$  and  $\frac{\partial X_k}{\partial X_c}$  all terms in these two expressions will also be positive for reasons analogous to those given in the previous argument. At less than full employment these two terms can also be positive (as noted earlier) even though when operating on the transformation curve they must both be negative. Once again, there is no ambiguity about the signs of  $\frac{\partial M}{\partial X_c}$  and  $\frac{\partial M}{\partial X_k}$  as both will be positive, even with negative  $\frac{\partial X_i}{\partial X_j}$ .

We turn now to an examination of the expressions in which  $M$

appears as the independent variable. The first two of these,  $\frac{\partial P_k}{\partial M}$  and  $\frac{\partial P_c}{\partial M}$ , we have been assured by many, many economists, must be positive.

Examination of 3.3-3 and 3.3-3a should, hopefully, reaffirm the quantity theory. Clearly, the denominators of both of these expressions are positive since both  $\frac{\partial d_k}{\partial P_k}$  and  $\frac{\partial d_c}{\partial P_c}$  are negative if the demand curves for  $X_k$  and  $X_c$  are downward sloping. (These derivatives are simply the change in the quantities demanded given a change in price.) What about the numerators? The two terms  $\frac{\partial s_k}{\partial r}$  and  $\frac{\partial s_c}{\partial r}$  are negative since increases



in the elements of  $\bar{r}$  represent an increase in costs and shift the firms' supply curve (MC) to the left.  $\frac{\partial d_k}{\partial \bar{r}}$  and  $\frac{\partial d_c}{\partial \bar{r}}$  will both be positive as quantity demanded will increase given the increase in income caused by increases in the elements of  $\bar{r}$ . (This effect will be somewhat dampened if increases in  $\bar{r}$  reduce loans significantly and thus indirectly the amounts of  $X_k$  and  $X_c$  demanded.)  $\frac{\partial d_k}{\partial P_c}$  and  $\frac{\partial d_c}{\partial P_k}$  can both be expected to be positive since increases in the  $P$ 's will increase income and thus the quantities demanded. So far all the elements of 3.3-3 and 3.3-3a have the proper sign. The only potential source of trouble is in the signs of the elements of  $\frac{\partial \bar{r}}{\partial M}$ . In general, we would expect these terms to be negative-increases in the money stock should it tend to reduce rates of interest. Thus, 3.3-3 and 3.3-3a will have the "proper" sign (be positive) only so long as  $\frac{\partial P_k}{\partial M} \left( \frac{\partial d_c}{\partial P_k} - \frac{\partial s_c}{\partial P_k} \right) > \left| \frac{\partial \bar{r}}{\partial M} \left( \frac{\partial d_c}{\partial \bar{r}} - \frac{\partial s_c}{\partial \bar{r}} \right) \right|$  and likewise in the corresponding expression for  $\frac{\partial P_c}{\partial M}$ . There seems to be little reason to think this inequality will not be satisfied since price effects should be more important than interest rate effects on quantities supplied and demanded.

The derivation of the expressions for  $\frac{\partial X_k}{\partial M}$  and  $\frac{\partial X_c}{\partial M}$  require no further comment since all they amount to is plugging in the equilibrium price change and subtracting from that expression the expression for the original quantity demanded or supplied. The signs of these terms depend on the direction of the effect of changes in  $M$  on the demand and supply curves as well as the location and shape of the initial and final curves. We hypothesize that increases in  $M$  cause both demand curves to shift to the right, because of the impact of  $M$  on  $Y$ . In the event that the supply curve shifts downward, both  $\frac{\partial X_k}{\partial M}$  and  $\frac{\partial X_c}{\partial M}$  will be

positive. An upward shift in the supply curve is a necessary, but not sufficient condition for  $\frac{\partial X_k}{\partial M}$  or  $\frac{\partial X_c}{\partial M}$  to be negative. For negativity the reduction in supply must be appropriately large. Whether the supply curves shift upward or downward depends on whether, on balance, an increase in  $M$  increases or reduces average cost (and thus marginal cost). Interest expenses will tend to fall while the costs of labor and capital tend to increase. On the whole it must be concluded that increases in  $M$  tend to increase  $AC$  and thus to shift the supply curves to the left for at least a portion of the curve. If changes in  $M$  shift not only the position of the  $AC$  curve but also affect its shape significantly, the new supply curve ( $MC$  curve) may lie above the old curve for other ranges. The argument may be made that increases in  $M$  induce such significant increases in demand that firms are induced to build larger plants (perhaps through  $\emptyset$ , the profits expectations variable as well as a result of increases in prices) once a situation like Figure 17 consequently results.

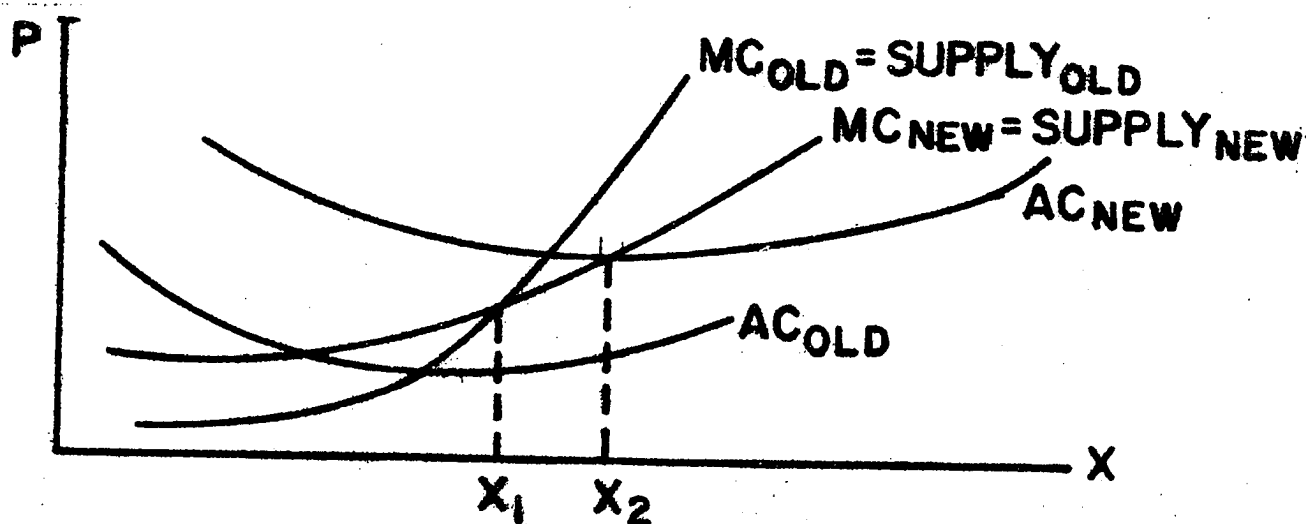


Figure 17. Effect of  $dM$  on  $MC$

In the case illustrated in Figure 17  $\frac{\partial X}{\partial M}$  is clearly positive. In general, we will assume that  $\frac{\partial X_c}{\partial M}$  and  $\frac{\partial X_k}{\partial M}$  will be positive although it is clearly not true that in an n-commodity world  $\frac{\partial X}{\partial M} \vee X$  need be positive. Indeed, at full employment in even a two commodity world increases in M cannot result in changes in the amounts of both commodities produced. More on this point in the next part of this chapter.

The terms in  $\frac{\partial Y}{\partial M}$  are all positive. Clearly  $\frac{\partial Y}{\partial M}$  is itself positive. Since Y is defined as money rather than real income this conclusion should be obvious.

The relations described and discussed above contain the essential information provided by the model on the determination of the stock of money and of the effects of changes in the stock of money on the variables (prices, physical output, income, and interest rates) of the model. These expressions are, of course, rates of change and do not, by themselves, provide us with the actual amount of change in any particular circumstance. This information is derived in the following manner. We know that the money stock is, by definition, the sum of currency outstanding (C) and total demand deposits (D). Thus

$$M = C + D. \quad (3.4-1)$$

Taking the total differential of this expression yields

$$\begin{aligned} dM = & \frac{\partial C}{\partial \bar{r}} d\bar{r} + \frac{\partial C}{\partial Y} dY + \frac{\partial C}{\partial P_k} dP_k + \frac{\partial C}{\partial P_c} dP_c + \frac{\partial C}{\partial X_k} dX_k \\ & \frac{\partial C}{\partial X_c} dX_c + \frac{\partial D}{\partial \bar{r}} d\bar{r} + \frac{\partial D}{\partial Y} dY + \frac{\partial D}{\partial P_k} dP_k + \frac{\partial D}{\partial P_c} dP_c + \\ & \frac{\partial D}{\partial X_k} dX_k + \frac{\partial D}{\partial X_c} dX_c \end{aligned} \quad (3.4-2)$$

Equation 3.4-2 can be simplified to (since  $D + C = M$ )

$$dM = \frac{\partial M}{\partial \bar{r}} d\bar{r} + \frac{\partial M}{\partial Y} dY + \frac{\partial M}{\partial X_k} dX_k + \frac{\partial M}{\partial X_c} dX_c + \frac{\partial M}{\partial P_k} dP_k + \frac{\partial M}{\partial P_c} dP_c. \quad (3.4-3)$$

The partial derivatives on the right hand side of 3.4-3 are the terms developed previously. Equation 3.4-3 provides us with the vehicle to calculate the change in the money stock resulting from a change in one or any combination of the variables  $\bar{r}$ ,  $Y$ ,  $X_k$ ,  $X_c$ ,  $P_c$ , or  $P_k$  once the size of the change(s) is (are) known.

Equation 3.4-3 is also a partial differential equation which could be used, given proper initial and boundary conditions to derive an expression for the money stock.

$$M = \sum_{r=1}^8 \int \frac{\partial M}{\partial \bar{r}} d\bar{r} + \int \frac{\partial M}{\partial Y} dY + \int \frac{\partial M}{\partial X_k} dX_k + \int \frac{\partial M}{\partial X_c} dX_c + \int \frac{\partial M}{\partial P_k} dP_k + \int \frac{\partial M}{\partial P_c} dP_c + K \quad (3.4-4)$$

where  $K$  is a composite constant of integration. Since we already have a perfectly good expression for  $M$  (see the first part of this chapter), this integration and specification of initial and boundary conditions will not be carried out.

#### A Word on Full Employment and Equilibrium

The questions of the stability, existence, and uniqueness of equilibrium as well as of full employment equilibrium are beyond the scope of this work. We have shown that the model can be solved for

the value of prices, outputs, income, interest rates, and the money stock and have developed the interrelations between these factors. What we have not shown (nor attempted to show) is whether or not this vector of solutions corresponds to a full employment vector of output. We shall assume that it is possible for our economy to reach full employment without specifying whether or not this occurs (1) without active monetary policy or (2) in conjunction with an "unacceptable" (however defined) rate of increase in prices. In fact, the next chapter is concerned with the effects and effectiveness of the various tools of monetary policy under two different assumptions about the state of the economy: (1) the economy is in an under-full-employment equilibrium (how and how effectively do the various types of monetary policy affect real output or employment) and (2) the economy has reached full employment with an unacceptable rate of price inflation (how and how effectively do the various tools of monetary policy combat inflation).

## CHAPTER IV. SOLUTION WITH AN ACTIVE GOVERNMENT

In this chapter we examine two major questions. First, how do the major tools of monetary policy work? That is, how do these tools affect the important variables of the model (in particular, the money stock and the various rates of interest). Second, given the effects of these monetary tools, how do they affect problems of unemployment and inflation? What are the qualitative and quantitative differences between the monetary tools?

## Changes in Reserve Requirements

The reserve requirement,  $r$ , enters the model in two places. The level of required reserves and the quantity of bank loans supplied are both affected by changes in  $r$ . We have

$$R = r(D + T) \quad (4.1-1)$$

$$L_b^S = f_1(r)(D + T) + A_{12}\bar{r}_b \quad (4.1-2)$$

where we have used the function notation  $f_1(r)$  to replace the term  $\pi$  in Equation 2.5-11 since this notation clearly shows the dependence of  $L_b^S$  on  $r$ .  $R$  is, of course, simply the level of required reserves. Expressions 4.1-1 and 4.1-2 indicate the effects of changes in  $r$ . Consider an increase in  $r$ ,  $dr > 0$ . From 4.1-1 this has the obvious effect of increasing required reserves.

$$dR = dr(D + T) \quad (4.1-3)$$

The immediate impact of this increase in  $R$  is a reduction in the banks'

holdings of currency, government securities, and firms' securities in an amount equal to  $dR$ .

$$dR = dr (D + T) = d (G_b + F_b + D_b) \quad (4.1-4)$$

We assume that the banks reduce the levels of these assets in proportion to the coefficients of  $D + T$  in the banks' demand for them. That is,

$$dG_b = \frac{\rho}{\rho + \gamma + \mu} dR \quad (4.1-5)$$

$$dF_b = \frac{\mu}{\rho + \gamma + \mu} dR \quad (4.1-6)$$

$$dC_b = \frac{\gamma}{\rho + \mu + \gamma} dR \quad (4.1-7)$$

Consider the banks' attempt to reduce its holdings of government securities. These securities may be purchased by either the public, the firms, the intermediaries, or the government (if it wishes to take some action to help offset the "crunch" of a change in the reserve requirement).

We can then write

$$dG_b = dG_p + dG_f + dG_n + dG_g. \quad (4.1-8)$$

We assume that  $dG_g$  is determined by the government strictly on the basis of economic policy and may range from zero to  $dG_b$ . The amount of  $dG_b$  not absorbed by the government is divided among the private sectors in the following manner

$$dG_b - dG_g = dG_p + dG_f + dG_n$$

$$dG_p = \frac{g}{g + g_f + g_n} (dG_b - dG_g) \quad (4.1-9)$$

$$dG_f = \frac{g_f}{g + g_f + g_n} (dG_b - dG_g) \quad (4.1-10)$$

$$dG_n = \frac{g_n}{g + g_f + g_n} (dG_b - dG_g) \quad (4.1-11)$$

where the  $g$ 's are the major parameters in the sectors demands for government securities.

These three sectors pay for their purchases of government securities by reducing the level of all other (financial) assets they hold (except for firms' securities). The reductions in other assets for each sector are given by

$$dG_p = dD_{pg} + dC_{pg} + dN_{pg} + dT_{pg} \quad (4.1-12)$$

$$\text{where } dD_{pg} = \frac{k_1}{k_1 + k_2 + k_3 + n_p} dG_p \quad (4.1-13)$$

$$dC_{pg} = \frac{k_2}{k_1 + k_2 + k_3 + n_p} dG_p \quad (4.1-14)$$

$$dN_{pg} = \frac{n_p}{k_1 + k_2 + k_3 + n_p} dG_p \quad (4.1-15)$$

$$dT_{pg} = \frac{k_3}{k_1 + k_2 + k_3 + n_p} dG_p \quad (4.1-16)$$

$$dG_f = dD_{fg} + dC_{fg} + dN_{fg} + dT_{fg} \quad (4.1-17)$$

$$\text{where } dD_{fg} = \frac{d_f}{d_f + a_5 + n_f + t_f} dG_f \quad (4.1-18)$$

$$dC_{fg} = \frac{a_5}{d_f + a_5 + n_f + t_f} dG_f \quad (4.1-19)$$

$$dN_{fg} = \frac{n_f}{d_f + a_5 + n_f + t_f} dG_f \quad (4.1-20)$$



$$dT_{fg} = \frac{t_f}{d_f + a_5 + n_f + t_f} dG_f \quad (4.1-21)$$

$$dG_n = dD_{ng} + dC_{ng} \quad (4.1-22)$$

where  $dD_{ng} = \frac{d_n}{d_n + c_n} dG_n \quad (4.1-23)$

$$dC_{ng} = \frac{c_n}{d_n + c_n} dG_n \quad (4.1-24)$$

Again, the parameters in the preceding equations are from the sectors demands for the various assets. Ignoring for a moment the impact on interest rates, we can write the results of this initial sale of G by the banks as

$$\begin{aligned} dD_{g1} &= dD_{pg} + dD_{fg} + dD_{ng} \\ &= \frac{k_1}{k_1 + k_2 + k_3 + n_p} (dG_p) + \frac{d_f}{d_f + a_5 + n_f + t_f} (dG_f) \\ &\quad + \frac{d_n}{d_n + c_n} (dG_n) \end{aligned} \quad (4.1-25)$$

where  $dD_{g1}$  means the first change in demand deposits resulting from the banks' sale of government securities. By combining 4.1-25 and the system 4.1-9 through 4.1-11, we can write

$$\begin{aligned} dD_{g1} &= \left[ \left( \frac{k_1}{k_1 + k_2 + k_3 + n_p} \right) \left( \frac{g}{g + g_f + g_n} \right) + \right. \\ &\quad \left. \left( \frac{d_f}{d_f + a_5 + n_f + t_f} \right) \left( \frac{g_f}{g + g_f + g_n} \right) + \right. \end{aligned}$$

$$\begin{aligned}
& \left( \frac{d_n}{d_n + c_n} \right) \left( \frac{g_n}{g + g_f + g_n} \right) \Big] (dG_b - dG_g) \\
\text{or } dD_{g1} = & \left( \frac{k_1 g}{k_1 + k_2 + k_3 + n_p} + \frac{d_f g_f}{d_f + a_5 + n_f + t_f} + \frac{d_n g_n}{d_n + c_n} \right) \\
& \left( \frac{dG_b - dG_g}{g + g_f + g_n} \right) \quad (4.1-26)
\end{aligned}$$

Proceeding in a similar manner we can write the expression for the initial impact on time deposits resulting from the banks' sale of government securities as

$$\begin{aligned}
dT_{g1} = & \left( \frac{k_3 g}{k_1 + k_2 + k_3 + n_p} + \frac{t_f g_f}{d_f + a_5 + n_f + t_f} \right) \\
& \frac{(dG_b - dG_g)}{g + g_f + g_n} \quad (4.1-27)
\end{aligned}$$

The expression for the initial impact on deposits in intermediaries is

$$\begin{aligned}
dN_{g1} = & \left( \frac{n_p g}{k_1 + k_2 + k_3 + n_p} + \frac{n_f g_f}{d_f + a_5 + n_f + t_f} \right) \\
& \frac{dG_b - dG_g}{g + g_f + g_n} \quad (4.1-28)
\end{aligned}$$

The initial impact on currency balances is given by

$$\begin{aligned}
dC_{g1} = & \left( \frac{k_2 g}{k_1 + k_2 + k_3 + n_p} + \frac{a_5 g_f}{d_f + a_5 + n_f + t_f} + \right. \\
& \left. \frac{c_n g_n}{d_n + c_n} \right) \frac{dG_b - dG_g}{g + g_f + g_n} \quad (4.1-29)
\end{aligned}$$

We now examine the initial impact of the banks' sale of firms' securities.

$$dF_b = \frac{\mu}{\rho + \mu + \gamma} dR = dF_p + dF_n. \quad (4.1-30)$$

Proceeding in an analogous manner,

$$dF_p = \frac{f}{f + b_n} dF_b \quad (4.1-31)$$

$$dF_n = \frac{b_n}{f + b_n} dF_b. \quad (4.1-32)$$

These purchases of firms securities by the public and the intermediaries causes a further reduction in their other assets, given by

$$dF_p = dD_{pf} + dC_{pf} + dN_{pf} + dT_{pf} \quad (4.1-33)$$

$$\text{where } dD_{pf} = \frac{k_1}{k_1 + k_2 + k_3 + n_p} dF_p \quad (4.1-34)$$

$$dC_{pf} = \frac{k_2}{k_1 + k_2 + k_3 + n_p} dF_p \quad (4.1-35)$$

$$dN_{pf} = \frac{n_p}{k_1 + k_2 + k_3 + n_p} dF_p \quad (4.1-36)$$

$$dT_{pf} = \frac{k_3}{k_1 + k_2 + k_3 + n_p} dF_p. \quad (4.1-37)$$

$$dF_{nf} = dD_{nf} + dC_{nf} \quad (4.1-38)$$

$$\text{where } dD_{nf} = \frac{d_n}{d_n + c_n} dF_n \quad (4.1-39)$$

$$dC_{nf} = \frac{c_n}{d_n + c_n} dF_n \quad (4.1-40)$$

The initial impacts resulting from the banks' sale of firms' securities are given by

$$dD_{f1} = \left( \frac{k_1 f}{k_1 + k_2 + k_3 + n_p} + \frac{d_n b_n}{d_n + c_n} \right) \frac{dF_b}{f + b_n} \quad (4.1-41)$$

$$dT_{f1} = \left( \frac{k_3 f}{k_1 + k_2 + k_3 + n_p} \right) \frac{dF_b}{f + b_n} \quad (4.1-42)$$

$$dC_{f1} = \left( \frac{k_2 f}{k_1 + k_2 + k_3 + n_p} + \frac{c_n b_n}{d_n + c_n} \right) \frac{F_b}{f + b_n} \quad (4.1-43)$$

$$dN_{f1} = \left( \frac{n_p f}{k_1 + k_2 + k_3 + n_p} \right) \frac{F_b}{f + b_n} \quad (4.1-44)$$

The total initial impacts on D, T, C and N are obtained by simply adding the appropriate pairs of equations and simplifying.

$$\begin{aligned} dD_1 &= 4.1-41 + 4.1-26 \\ &= \left[ \frac{k_1}{k_1 + k_2 + k_3 + n_p} (g + f) + \frac{d_n}{c_n + d_n} (g_n + b_n) \right] \\ &\quad \left[ \frac{dG_b - dG_g}{g + g_f + g_n} + \frac{dF_b}{f + b_n} \right] + \left( \frac{d_f g_f}{d_f + a_5 + n_f + t_f} \right) \\ &\quad \left( \frac{dG_b - dG_g}{g + g_f + g_n} \right) \end{aligned} \quad (4.1-45)$$

$$\begin{aligned} dT_1 &= 4.1-42 + 4.1-27 \\ &= \left( \frac{k_3 (f + g)}{k_1 + k_2 + k_3 + g_n} \right) \left( \frac{dG_b - dG_g}{g + g_f + g_n} + \frac{dF_b}{f + b_n} \right) \\ &\quad \left( \frac{t_f g_f}{d_f + a_5 + n_f + t_f} \right) \left( \frac{dG_b - dG_g}{g + g_f + g_n} \right) \end{aligned} \quad (4.1-46)$$

$$\begin{aligned}
dC_1 &= 4.1-29 + 4.1-43 \\
&= \left( \frac{k_2 (f + g)}{k_1 + k_2 + k_3 + n_p} + \frac{c_n (b_n + g_n)}{c_n + d_n} \right) \\
&\quad \left( \frac{F_b}{f + b_n} + \frac{dG_b - dG_g}{g + g_f + g_n} \right) + \left( \frac{a_5 g_r}{d_f + a_5 + n_f + t_f} \right) \\
&\quad \left( \frac{dG_b - dG_g}{g + g_f + g_n} \right) \tag{4.1-47}
\end{aligned}$$

$$\begin{aligned}
dN_1 &= 4.1-28 + 4.1-44 \\
&= \left( \frac{n_p (f + g)}{k_1 + k_2 + k_3 + n_p} \right) \left( \frac{F_b}{f + b_n} + \frac{dG_b - dG_g}{g + g_f + g_n} \right) \\
&\quad + \left( \frac{n_f g_f}{d_f + a_5 + n_f + t_f} \right) \left( \frac{dG_b - dG_g}{g + g_f + g_n} \right) \tag{4.1-48}
\end{aligned}$$

The sum of 4.1-45 and 4.1-46 gives us the initial reduction in bank deposits. This, of course, results in another reserve deficiency for the banks and thus initiates another round of asset adjustment throughout the economy. The new level of required reserves is given by

$$R \text{ new} = (r + dr) [D + T - (dD + dT)]$$

while actual reserves are now

$$R \text{ actual} = (r + dr)(D + T) - (dD + dT),$$

so that the reserve deficiency is the difference between these two expressions, or

$$R \text{ def} = (dD + dT) [1 - (r + dr)] . \quad (4.1-49)$$

In terms of Equations 4.1-45 and 4.1-46

$$\begin{aligned}
 R \text{ def} = & \left\{ \left[ \frac{(k_1 + k_3)(g + f)}{k_1 + k_2 + k_3 + n_p} + \frac{d_n}{c_n + d_n} (g_n + b_n) \right] \right. \\
 & \left[ \frac{dG_b - dG_g}{g + g_f + g_n} + \frac{dF_b}{f + b_n} \right] + \\
 & \left. \left[ \left( \frac{g_f (d_f + t_f)}{d_f + a_5 + n_f + t_f} \right) \left( \frac{dG_b - dG_g}{g + g_f + g_n} \right) \right] \right\} \\
 & \{ 1 - (r + dr) \} .
 \end{aligned} \quad (4.1-50)$$

Note that we can write 4.1-50 as

$$\begin{aligned}
 R \text{ def} = & \left[ \left( \frac{k_1 + k_3}{k_1 + k_2 + k_3 + n_p} \right) (dG_p + dF_p) + \right. \\
 & \frac{d_f + t_f}{d_f + a_5 + n_f + t_f} dG_f + \left( \frac{d_n}{c_n + d_n} \right) \\
 & \left. (dG_n + dF_n) \right] [1 - (r + dr)]
 \end{aligned} \quad (4.1-51)$$

where each term on the right-hand side is the size of one of the nonbank private sectors reduction of their holding of demand and time deposits.

Furthermore, we know that

$$dG_p = \left( \frac{g}{g + g_f + g_n} \right) \left[ \left( \frac{\rho}{\rho + \mu + \gamma} \right) (dr(D + T)) - dG_g \right] \quad (4.1-52)$$

$$dG_f = \left( \frac{g_f}{g + g_f + g_n} \right) \left[ \left( \frac{\rho}{\rho + \gamma + \mu} \right) (dr(D + T)) - dG_g \right] \quad (4.1-53)$$

$$dG_n = \left( \frac{g_n}{g + g_f + g_n} \right) \left[ \left( \frac{\rho}{\rho + \gamma + \mu} \right) (dr(D + T)) - dG_g \right] \quad (4.1-54)$$

$$dF_p = \left( \frac{f}{f + b_n} \right) \left( \frac{\mu}{\rho + \gamma + \mu} \right) dr (D + T) \quad (4.1-55)$$

$$dF_n = \left( \frac{b_n}{f + b_n} \right) \left( \frac{\mu}{\rho + \gamma + \mu} \right) dr (D + T) \quad (4.1-56)$$

R def results in another reduction of the banks' holdings of government securities, firms' securities, and currency which, in turn, causes another rearrangement of the asset portfolios of the various sectors. This complex process continues, forming infinite series of changes in assets. The solution revolves around the two problems: (1) finding the general expression for the series of reserve deficiencies and (2) finding whether or not this series converges and, if so, to what.

We introduce the following notation:

$$R \text{ def } 1 = dr (D + T)$$

$$R \text{ def } 2 = \left[ \left( \frac{k_1 + k_3}{k_1 + k_2 + k_3 + n_p} \right) (dG_p + dF_p) + \right. \\ \left. \frac{d_f + t_f}{d_f + a_5 + n_f + t_f} dG_f + \left( \frac{d_n}{c_n + d_n} \right) \right. \\ \left. (dG_n + dF_n) \right] [1 - (r + dr)].$$

By substituting 4.1-52 through 56 into 4.1-51 we obtain

$$\frac{R \text{ def } 2}{1 - (r + dr)} = \left( \frac{k_1 + k_3}{k_1 + k_2 + k_3 + n_p} \right) \left\{ \left( \frac{g}{g + g_f + g_n} \right) \right. \quad (4.1-57)$$

$$\left[ \left( \frac{\rho}{\rho + \gamma + \mu} \right) R \text{ def } 1 - dG_g \right] + \left( \frac{f}{f + b_n} \right)$$

$$\left( \frac{\mu}{\rho + \gamma + \mu} \right) R \text{ def } \left. \right\} + \left( \frac{d_f + t_f}{a_5 + d_f + n_f + t_f} \right)$$

$$\left\{ \left( \frac{g_f}{g + g_f + g_n} \right) \left[ \left( \frac{\rho}{\rho + \gamma + \mu} \right) (R \text{ def } 1) \right. \right.$$

$$\left. - dG_g \right] \left. \right\} + \left( \frac{d_n}{c_n + d_n} \right) \left\{ \left( \frac{g_n}{g + g_f + g_n} \right) \right.$$

$$\left[ \left( \frac{\rho}{\rho + \mu + \gamma} \right) (R \text{ def}) - dG_g \right] + \left( \frac{b_n}{f + b_n} \right)$$

$$\left( \frac{\mu}{\rho + \gamma + \mu} \right) R \text{ def } \left. \right\}.$$

In order to simplify the analysis, we assume that after its first purchase of government securities, the government purchases no more from the banking system while the readjustment process is working itself out. This assumption permits us to write the general expression for any reserve deficiency as

$$R \text{ def } j = \left[ \left( \frac{k_1 + k_3}{k_1 + k_2 + k_3 + n_p} \right) (dG_{pj} + dF_{pj}) + \right. \quad (4.1-58)$$

$$\frac{d_f + t_f}{d_f + a_5 + n_f + t_f} (dG_{fj}) + \frac{d_n}{c_n + d_n}$$

$$\left. (dG_{nj} + dF_{nj}) \right] [1 - (r + dr)]$$



where, because of our assumption about the government,

$$dG_{pj} = \left( \frac{g}{g + g_f + g_n} \right) \left( \frac{\rho}{\rho + \gamma + \mu} \right) R \text{ def } j-1$$

$$dG_{fj} = \left( \frac{g_f}{g + g_f + g_n} \right) \left( \frac{\rho}{\rho + \gamma + \mu} \right) R \text{ def } j-1$$

$$dG_{nj} = \left( \frac{g_n}{g + g_f + g_n} \right) \left( \frac{\rho}{\rho + \gamma + \mu} \right) R \text{ def } j-1$$

$$dF_{pj} = \left( \frac{f}{f + b_n} \right) \left( \frac{\mu}{\rho + \gamma + \mu} \right) R \text{ def } j-1$$

$$dF_{nj} = \left( \frac{b_n}{f + b_n} \right) \left( \frac{\mu}{\rho + \gamma + \mu} \right) R \text{ def } j-1.$$

Substituting these expressions into 4.1-58 and dividing through by  $R \text{ def } j-1$ , we have

$$\begin{aligned} \frac{R \text{ def } j}{R \text{ def } j-1} = & \left[ \frac{k_1 + k_2}{k_1 + k_2 + k_3 + n_p} \left[ \left( \frac{g}{g + g_f + g_n} \right) \right. \right. & (4.1-59) \\ & \left. \left( \frac{\rho}{\rho + \gamma + \mu} \right) + \left( \frac{f}{f + b_n} \right) \left( \frac{\mu}{\rho + \gamma + \mu} \right) \right] + \\ & \left( \frac{d_f + t_f}{d_f + a_5 + n_f + t_f} \right) \left( \frac{g_f}{g + g_f + g_n} \right) \\ & \left( \frac{\rho}{\rho + \gamma + \mu} \right) + \frac{d_n}{c_n + d_n} \left[ \left( \frac{g_n}{g + g_f + g_n} \right) \right. \\ & \left. \left( \frac{\rho}{\rho + \gamma + \mu} \right) + \left( \frac{b_n}{f + b_n} \right) \left( \frac{\mu}{\rho + \gamma + \mu} \right) \right] \\ & [1 - (r + dr)]. \end{aligned}$$

This result holds for all  $R \text{ def } j$ ,  $j > 4$ . Call this ratio of reserve deficiencies  $Q_r$ . Then it follows that

$$\frac{R \text{ def } 4}{R \text{ def } 3} = Q_r \Rightarrow R \text{ def } 4 = Q_r R \text{ def } 3$$

$$\frac{R \text{ def } 5}{R \text{ def } 4} = Q_r \Rightarrow R \text{ def } 5 = Q_r^2 R \text{ def } 3$$

.

.

.

$$\frac{R \text{ def } i}{R \text{ def } i-1} = Q_r \Rightarrow R \text{ def } i = Q_r^{i-3} R \text{ def } 3$$

The expression for the total reserve deficiency,  $R \text{ def } T$ , can be written as

$$\begin{aligned} R \text{ def } T &= R \text{ def } 1 + R \text{ def } 2 + R \text{ def } 3 + \sum_{i=4}^{\infty} R \text{ def } i \\ &= R \text{ def } 1 + R \text{ def } 2 + R \text{ def } 3 + \lim_{n \rightarrow \infty} \sum_{j=1}^n Q_r^j R \text{ def } 3 \end{aligned} \quad (4.1-60)$$

This infinite series will converge to  $\frac{R \text{ def } 3}{1 - Q_r}$  if  $|Q_r| < 1$ . Since each term individually in  $Q_r$  is less than 1,  $Q_r$  will be less than one due to its multiplicative structure. (If  $Q_r$  were greater than one, any change in the reserve requirement would have an infinitely large impact on the economy since the total excess or deficit in reserves would be infinitely large (small).)

We can write the total reserve deficiency as:

$$R \text{ def } T = R \text{ def } 1 + R \text{ def } 2 + R \text{ def } 3 \left(1 + \frac{1}{1 - Q_r}\right) \quad (4.1-61)$$

where

$$\begin{aligned}
 R \text{ def } 3 = Q \left\{ \left( \frac{k_1 + k_3}{k_1 + k_2 + k_3 + n_p} \right) \left[ \left( \frac{g}{g + g_f + g_n} \right) \left( \frac{\rho}{\rho + \gamma + \mu} \right) \right. \right. \\
 \left. \left. dr(D + T) + \left( \frac{f}{f + b_n} \right) \left( \frac{\mu}{\rho + \gamma + \mu} \right) dr(D + T) \right] \right. \\
 \left. + \left( \frac{d_f + t_f}{a_5 + d_f + n_f + t_f} \right) \left[ \left( \frac{g_f}{g + g_f + g_n} \right) \right. \right. \quad (4.1-62) \\
 \left. \left( \frac{\rho}{\rho + \gamma + \mu} \right) dr(D + T) + \left( \frac{d_n}{c_n + d_n} \right) \right. \\
 \left. \left[ \left( \frac{\rho}{\rho + \gamma + \mu} \right) \left( \frac{g_n}{g + g_f + g_n} \right) + \left( \frac{b_n}{b_n + c_n} \right) \right. \right. \\
 \left. \left. \left( \frac{\mu}{\rho + \gamma + \mu} \right) \right] \right\} [1 - (r + dr)] .
 \end{aligned}$$

There seems little reason to write 4.1-61 out in full except to underscore the complexity added when a model of the money mechanism is made just a bit more realistic.

From the expression for R def T we can derive all of the remaining impacts on assets from the change in reserve requirements. The banks' decreases in assets are given by

$$dC_{bt} = \frac{\gamma}{\rho + \gamma + \mu} R \text{ def } T \quad (4.1-63)$$

$$dG_{bt} = \frac{\rho}{\rho + \gamma + \mu} R \text{ def } T \quad (4.1-64)$$

$$dF_{bt} = \frac{\mu}{\rho + \gamma + \mu} R \text{ def } T \quad (4.1-65)$$

The corresponding increases in government and firms' securities held by the other sectors are given by:

$$dG_{pt} = \frac{g}{g + g_f + g_n} \left( \frac{\rho}{\rho + \gamma + \mu} R \text{ def } T - dG_{go} \right) \quad (4.1-66)$$

$$dG_{nt} = \frac{g_n}{g + g_f + g_n} \left( \frac{\rho}{\rho + \gamma + \mu} R \text{ def } T - dG_{go} \right) \quad (4.1-67)$$

$$dG_{ft} = \frac{g_f}{g + g_f + g_n} \left( \frac{\rho}{\rho + \gamma + \mu} R \text{ def } T - dG_{go} \right) \quad (4.1-68)$$

$$dF_{pt} = \frac{f}{f + b_n} \left( \frac{\mu}{\rho + \gamma + \mu} R \text{ def } T \right) \quad (4.1-69)$$

$$dF_{nt} = \frac{b_n}{f + b_n} \left( \frac{\mu}{\rho + \gamma + \mu} R \text{ def } T \right) \quad (4.1-70)$$

The public's increase in assets is the sum of 4.1-66 and 4.1-69, or,

$$\begin{aligned} d(G + F)_{pt} &= \frac{g}{g + g_n + g_f} \left( \frac{\rho}{\rho + \gamma + \mu} R \text{ def } T - dG_{go} \right) \quad (4.1-71) \\ &+ \frac{f}{f + b_n} \left( \frac{\mu}{\rho + \gamma + \mu} R \text{ def } T \right). \end{aligned}$$

The intermediaries holdings of government and firms' securities increases by:

$$\begin{aligned} d(G + F)_{nt} &= \frac{g_n}{g + g_f + g_n} \left( \frac{\rho}{\rho + \gamma + \mu} R \text{ def } T - dG_{go} \right) \quad (4.1-72) \\ &+ \frac{b_n}{f + b_n} \left( \frac{\mu}{\rho + \gamma + \mu} R \text{ def } T \right). \end{aligned}$$

The firms' increase in assets is simply Equation 4.1-68.

The offsetting decreases in assets for the public sector are

$$dC_{pt} = \frac{k_2}{k_1 + k_2 + k_3 + n_p} d(G + F)_{pt}; \quad (4.1-73)$$

$$dD_{pt} = \frac{k_1}{k_1 + k_2 + k_3 + n_p} d(G + F)_{pt}; \quad (4.1-74)$$

$$dT_{pt} = \frac{k_3}{k_1 + k_2 + k_3 + n_p} d(G + F)_{pt}; \quad (4.1-75)$$

$$dN_{pt} = \frac{n_p}{k_1 + k_2 + k_3 + n_p} d(G + F)_{pt}. \quad (4.1-76)$$

The intermediaries' reductions in assets are

$$dC_{nt} = \frac{c_n}{c_n + d_n} d(G + F)_{nt}; \quad (4.1-77)$$

$$dD_{nt} = \frac{d_n}{c_n + d_n} d(G + F)_{nt}. \quad (4.1-78)$$

The firms' reductions in assets are

$$dC_{ft} = \frac{a_5}{d_f + a_5 + n_f + t_f} dG_{ft}; \quad (4.1-79)$$

$$dD_{ft} = \frac{d_f}{d_f + a_5 + n_f + t_f} dG_{ft}; \quad (4.1-80)$$

$$dT_{ft} = \frac{t_f}{d_f + a_5 + n_f + t_f} dG_{ft}; \quad (4.1-81)$$

$$dN_{ft} = \frac{n_f}{d_f + a_5 + n_f + t_f} dG_{ft}. \quad (4.1-82)$$

We can at last find expressions for the total reductions in assets, caused by the change in reserve requirements.

$$\begin{aligned}
 dC_t &= 4.1-63 + 4.1-73 + 4.1-77 + 4.1-80 \\
 &= \frac{\gamma}{\rho + \gamma + \mu} R \text{ def } T + \frac{k_2}{k_1 + k_2 + k_3 + n_p} d(G + F)_{pt} + \\
 &\quad \frac{c_n}{c_n + d_n} d(G + F)_{nt} + \frac{a_5}{d_f + a_5 + n_f + t_f} dG_{ft}
 \end{aligned} \tag{4.1-83}$$

$$\begin{aligned}
 dD_t &= 4.1-74 + 4.1-78 + 4.1-80 \\
 &= \frac{k_1}{k_1 + k_2 + k_3 + n_p} d(G + F)_{pt} + \frac{d_n}{c_n + d_n} d(G + F)_{nt} + \\
 &\quad \frac{d_f}{d_f + a_5 + n_f + t_f} dG_{ft}
 \end{aligned} \tag{4.1-84}$$

$$\begin{aligned}
 dT_t &= 4.1-75 + 4.1-81 \\
 &= \frac{k_3}{k_1 + k_2 + k_3 + n_p} d(G + F)_{pt} + \frac{t_f}{d_f + a_5 + n_f + t_f} \\
 &\quad dG_{ft}
 \end{aligned} \tag{4.1-85}$$

$$\begin{aligned}
 dN_t &= 4.1-76 + 4.1-82 \\
 &= \frac{n_p}{k_1 + k_2 + k_3 + n_p} d(G + F)_{pt} + \frac{n_f}{d_f + a_5 + n_f + t_f} \\
 &\quad dG_{ft}
 \end{aligned} \tag{4.1-86}$$

The total impact on the money stock of the increase in reserve requirements is simply the sum of 4.1-83 and 4.1-84.

$$\begin{aligned}
 dM_{tr} = d(C_t + D_t) = & \frac{\gamma}{\rho + \gamma + \mu} R \text{ def } T + \\
 & \left[ \frac{k_2 + k_1}{k_1 + k_2 + k_3 + n_p} \right] d(G + F)_{pt} + d(G + F)_{nt} \\
 & + \left[ \frac{a_5 + d_f}{d_f + a_5 + n_f + t_f} \right] dG_{ft}
 \end{aligned} \tag{4.1-87}$$

which is, of course, negative in the case of increases in the reserve requirement. This same expression holds for the case of reductions in  $r$ , in which case it will be positive.

Nothing has been said yet about the changes in the prices of government and firms' securities necessary to induce the various nonbank sectors to either buy or sell the amounts necessary for the relations just developed to hold. Without the appropriate changes in prices (rates of interest), the asset readjustment process just described cannot occur. Again, we will consider the case of an increase in reserve requirements. (In the opposite case, the argument is essentially the same with only the signs changed.) The question here is by how much must the prices of government and firms' securities fall (the rates increase) to induce the various nonbank sectors to increase their holdings of  $G$  and  $F$  as given by Equations 4.1-68, 72, and 73? (Note that the effects of a change in the reserve requirement on the rates on time deposits and deposits in the intermediaries will not be direct, but will be the result of the effect of  $dr$  on  $r_g$  and  $r_f$ . As these rates increase,  $r_t$  and  $r_n$  will tend to follow.) We can write the aggregate demand for  $G$  and  $F$  (excluding the banks' demand) as

$$G_a^D = g_Y + A_{26} \bar{r}_p + g_n N + A_{15} \bar{r}_n + g_f(PX) + A_7 \bar{r}_f \quad (4.1-88)$$

$$F_a^D = b_n N + A_{17} \bar{r}_n + n_p Y + A_{30} \bar{r}_p \quad (4.1-89)$$

Writing these expressions in terms of only the variables that are directly affected as a result of the change in the reserve requirement, we have

$$G_a^D = (a_7 + a_{15} + a_{26})r_f + (b_7 + b_{15} + b_{26})r_g + g_n N \quad (4.1-90)$$

$$F_a^D = (a_{17} + a_{30})r_f + (b_{17} + b_{30})r_g + b_n N \quad (4.1-91)$$

The immediate changes in  $r_f$ ,  $r_g$  and  $N$  must be such that  $dG_a^D = 4.1-66 + 67 + 68 = \frac{\mu}{\rho + \gamma + \mu} R \text{ def } T$ . We already know that the total change in  $N$  is given by

$$dN_t = \frac{n_p}{k_1 + k_2 + k_3 + n_p} d(G+F)_{pt} + \frac{n_f}{d_f + a_5 + n_f + t_f} dG_{ft} \quad (4.1-86)$$

Thus,

$$dG_a^D = \frac{\rho}{\rho + \gamma + \mu} R \text{ def } T = (a_7 + a_{15} + a_{26})dr_f + \quad (4.1-92)$$

$$(b_7 + b_{15} + b_{26})dr_g;$$

$$dF_a^D = \frac{\mu}{\rho + \gamma + \mu} R \text{ def } T = (a_{17} + a_{30})dr_f + (b_{17} + \quad (4.1-93)$$

$$b_{30})dr_g + b_n dN.$$

Substituting the expression for  $dN$  into 4.1-82 and 83 yields a system



of two equations in two unknowns,  $dr_g$  and  $dr_f$ . Solving this system simultaneously yields expressions for the necessary increases in  $dr_g$  and  $dr_f$ .

$$dr_{gr} = R \text{ def } T \left[ \frac{\rho}{\rho + \gamma + \mu} - \frac{a_7 + a_{15} + a_{26}}{a_{17} + a_{30}} \right. \\ \left. \frac{\left( \frac{\mu}{\rho + \gamma + \mu} \right)}{b_7 + b_{15} + b_{27} - \frac{a_7 + a_{15} + a_{26}}{a_{17} + a_{30}} (b_{17} + b_{30})} \right] + dN \frac{g_n + b_n \left( \frac{a_7 + a_{15} + a_{26}}{a_{17} + a_{30}} \right)}{b_7 + b_{15} + b_{27} - \frac{a_7 + a_{15} + a_{26}}{a_{17} + a_{30}} (b_{17} + b_{30})} \quad (4.1-94)$$

$$dr_{fr} = \frac{R \text{ def } T}{a_{17} + a_{30}} \left\{ \frac{\mu}{\rho + \gamma + \mu} - (b_{17} + b_{30}) \right. \\ \left[ \frac{\frac{\rho}{\rho + \gamma + \mu} - \frac{(a_7 + a_{15} + a_{26})}{a_{17} + a_{30}} \frac{\mu}{\rho + \gamma + \mu}}{b_7 + b_{15} + b_{26} - (b_{17} + b_{30})} \right] \left. \frac{dN}{a_{17} + a_{30}} \left\{ b_n - (b_{17} + b_{30}) \right. \right. \right. \\ \left. \left. \left[ \frac{\frac{b_n (a_7 + a_{15} + a_{26})}{a_{17} + a_{30}} - g_n}{b_7 + b_{15} + b_{26} - (b_{17} + b_{30})} \right] \right\} \right\}. \quad (4.1-95)$$

The expressions for  $dM_{tr}$ ,  $dr_{gr}$  and  $dr_{fr}$  provide us with the necessary information to calculate the other effects on the economy of the asset-readjustment resulting from a change in the reserve requirement,  $r$ . To calculate the effects on income, for example, one need only combine the expressions developed in the last chapter for  $\frac{\partial Y}{\partial M}$ ,  $\frac{\partial Y}{\partial r_g}$  and  $\frac{\partial Y}{\partial r_f}$  with the value of the appropriate differential to obtain the three effects

on income caused by the change in  $r$ :

1. the money-induced effect,  $\frac{\partial Y}{\partial M} dM_{tr}$ ;
2. the government security rate-induced effect,  $\frac{\partial Y}{\partial r} dr_{gr}$ ;
- and 3. the firms' securities rate-induced effect,  $\frac{\partial Y}{\partial r_f} dr_{fr}$ .

The same procedure can be followed to obtain expressions for the effect on prices, outputs, and the other rates of interest.

Changes in the reserve requirement also affect the economy in another manner. The foregoing concentrated solely on changes resulting from a readjustment in the asset portfolios of the various sectors. Other effects work through the impact of a change in  $r$  on the banks' willingness to supply loans to both the public and the firms. Equation 4.1-2 ( $L_b^S = f_1(r)(D + T) + A_{12}\bar{r}_b$ ) serves as the basis for discussing these effects. Taking the total differential of 4.1-2, we obtain

$$dL_b^S = f_1(r) \frac{\partial(D + T)}{\partial r} dr + (D + T) \frac{\partial f_1}{\partial r} dr + A_{12} \frac{\partial \bar{r}_b}{\partial r} dr. \quad (4.1-96)$$

The quantity supplied of bank loans is reduced by an increase in  $r$ , ceteris paribus, for three reasons:

1. an increase in  $r$  reduces  $D + T$  ( $\frac{\partial(D + T)}{\partial r} < 0$ ); we have discussed this impact on  $D + T$  in the foregoing discussion;
2. an increase in  $r$  reduces the amount that may be lent per dollar of deposits ( $\frac{\partial f_1}{\partial r} < 0$ ); and
3. an increase in  $r$  increases the rates on securities held as secondary reserves which, without an increase in loan rates,

reduces the amount banks are willing to lend per dollar of deposits ( $a_{12}$  and  $b_{12} < 0$  combined with  $\frac{\partial r_f}{\partial r}$  and  $\frac{\partial r_g}{\partial r} > 0$ ).

Likewise, the quantity of loans demanded by the public and the firms will be reduced when  $r$  is increased since interest rates will move higher while income, prices and real output tend to fall as the money stock shrinks. Consequently, the actual amount of loans will fall which will, in turn, lower the demand for both the consumer and capital good, thus further depressing the level of economic activity in the economy.

These effects on loans and demands could be calculated exactly in terms of the model, but the chain of causality seems so clear that this will not be done. Suffice it to say that the expressions developed earlier when only the asset readjustment effects of a change in  $r$  were considered, understate the various impacts of a change in  $r$  on the economy since they do not take into account the impact of  $dr$  on either the quantity of loans demanded or supplied.

In quick summary, we have seen that changes in the reserve requirement affect the economy through two major channels:

1. by causing a readjustment in the asset portfolios of the various sectors of the economy and
2. by influencing the amount of loans made and thus the demand for goods.

Working through both these avenues, changes in the reserve requirement are a powerful and diffuse technique for influencing the level of activity in our economy.

## Changes in the Rediscount Rate

The banks' demand for rediscounting is given by

$$d^d = \bar{L}_p^{Db} + \bar{L}_f^{Db} - \bar{L}_b^S - \frac{d_o}{r_{bp} - r_d} - \frac{d_l}{r_{bf} - r_d} \quad (2.5-20)$$

where  $d^d \geq 0$  when  $\bar{L}_p^{Db} + \bar{L}_f^{Db} > \bar{L}_b^S + \frac{d_o}{r_{bp} - r_d} + \frac{d_l}{r_{bf} - r_d}$  and  $d^d = 0$  otherwise.

No matter how great the difference between the rates on loans and the rediscount rate, no rediscounting occurs unless there is an excess demand for loans.

There are two cases to consider when examining the effects of changes in the rediscount rate. First, there may be an excess supply of loans. In this case, neither increases nor reductions in  $r_d$  will have any effect on the economy since the change in  $r_d$  will not cause a change in the actual amount of loans, nor will banks have, solely because of the change in  $r_d$ , any reason to change the rates on loans (even though these will tend to fall as a result, not of a change in  $r_d$ , but because of the excess supply of loans). Second, there may be either an excess demand for loans or a situation of equilibrium in the bank loan market. We want to show that in this case changes in  $r_d$  will have an impact on the economy. Note that we are using the terms excess demand and excess supply of loans to refer to the difference between the aggregate quantity of loans demanded,  $\bar{L}_p^{Db} + \bar{L}_f^{Db}$ , and the quantity of loans supplied out of unborrowed reserves,  $\bar{L}_b^S$ . When  $\bar{L}_p^{Db} + \bar{L}_f^{Db} > \bar{L}_b^S$ , the possibility exists that the bank will engage in some rediscounting; the actual amount will not, in general, be equal to this difference.

Examination of 2.5-20 shows that, since  $d_0$  and  $d_1$  are positive constants, increases in  $r_d$  lower the amount of rediscounting banks are willing to engage in while reductions in  $r_d$  increase  $d^d$ , ceteris paribus. Differentiating 2.5-20 with respect to  $r_d$  yields:

$$\frac{\partial d^d}{\partial r_d} = \frac{\partial L_p^{Db}}{\partial r_d} + \frac{\partial L_f^{Db}}{\partial r_d} - \frac{\partial L_b^S}{\partial r_d} + \frac{d_0 \left( \frac{\partial r_{bp}}{\partial r_d} - 1 \right)}{(r_{bp} - r_d)^2} + \frac{d_1 \left( \frac{\partial r_{bf}}{\partial r_d} - 1 \right)}{(r_{bp} - r_d)^2} \quad (4.2-1)$$

$\frac{\partial d^d}{\partial r_d}$  is negative 0.

1.  $\frac{\partial L_p^{Db}}{\partial r_d}$  and  $\frac{\partial L_f^{Db}}{\partial r_d}$  are negative because increases in  $r_d$  tend to increase  $r_{bp}$  and  $r_{bf}$ , thus, lowering the quantity of loans demanded;
2.  $\frac{\partial L_b^S}{\partial r_d}$  is positive since increases in  $r_{bp}$  and  $r_{bf}$  will increase the quantity of loans supplied;
3. both  $\frac{\partial r_{bp}}{\partial r_d}$  and  $\frac{\partial r_{bf}}{\partial r_d}$  are positive but less than, or equal to 1.<sup>1</sup>

---

<sup>1</sup>If  $\frac{\partial r_{bp}}{\partial r_d}$  and  $\frac{\partial r_{bf}}{\partial r_d}$  were greater than 1 (this is, of course, an empirical question) we have the "perverse" case where an increase in  $r_d$  has such a strong impact on the rates banks charge that this induces them to increase their amount of rediscounting. (Remember we are discussing a situation where there may be an excess demand for loans. In such a situation, the "perverse" result is perhaps less unlikely.)

Let us now consider the effects of both increases and decreases in  $r_d$  under the possibilities of (1) prior equilibrium in the loan market and (2) prior excess demand in the loan market.

By equilibrium in the bank loan market we mean that the actual amounts lent to each sector are equal to their quantity of loans demanded from the bank. This equality may or may not have been achieved through rediscounting by the banks. Consider first an increase in  $r_d$  coupled with equilibrium in the loan market. If equilibrium were previously achieved without rediscounting an increase in  $r_d$  will have no impact on the economy since, ceteris paribus, the actual amounts lent and rates on bank loans will be unchanged. If, however, equilibrium were reached through rediscounting, the increase in  $r_d$  will reduce the amount of rediscounting the banks are willing to engage in, thus causing a reduction in the amounts actually lent to the other sectors. This raises the rates on bank loans and increases the firms' and publics' demand for loans from the intermediaries. If the intermediaries are unable to accommodate this increase in the quantity of loans demanded, total loans in the economy will fall, reducing income and the output of goods. Interest rates tend to rise. In the situation being discussed, a reduction in  $r_d$  will have no effect on the economy since the reduction in  $r_d$  will not cause either the public or the firms to increase the quantity of loans they demand.

Consider a situation of excess demand for loans. Here, when  $r_d$  is increased, the actual amount of rediscounting will fall, increasing the excess demand for loans thereby driving  $r_{bp}$  and  $r_{bf}$  higher. These increases in turn result in increases in all other rates of interest.

As a result income and the output of goods will fall. On the other hand, a reduction in  $r_d$  in this situation will increase the amount of rediscounting and thus the amount of loans actually made. This has the effect of increasing the demand for both the capital and consumer good, raising prices and output. The reduction in  $r_d$  also reduces the upward pressure on the loan rates which, in turn, tends to dampen down the increases in all other rates of interest. The effect is a general stimulation of economic activity.

In many circumstances, changes in  $r_d$  have no effect on the economy. Even in the event where it does, the resulting changes in the level of economic activity are likely to be minor unless the change in  $r_d$  is very large. The effects are also transitory in the sense that any change resulting from a change in  $r_d$  will be swamped by the effects of other changes occurring in the economy. As Table 10 shows, changes in  $r_d$  have an impact on the economy only in disequilibrium situations (and only in particular sorts of disequilibria). Consider cases 6 and 8 in Table 10. In these cases, rates of interest are being bid up by the excess demand for loans. Unless  $r_d$  is reduced enough to completely eliminate this excess demand, the total result in each case will be an increase in the rates of interest and either an unchanged or decreased amount lent by the banks. Only in case 7 in Table 10 does the change in  $r_d$  reinforce the major current of change in the economy. More of this later when we compare the effectiveness of the various tools of monetary policy. Table 10 summarizes these effects.

Table 10. Effects of  $\Delta r_d$ 

|    | Situation  | $\Delta r_d$ | Effect  |
|----|--|--------------|---|
| 1. | $L_p^{Db} + L_f^{Db} < \bar{L}_b^S$              | $\uparrow$   | None  |
| 2. | $L_p^{Db} + L_f^{Db} < \bar{L}_b^S$              | $\downarrow$ | None  |
| 3. | $L_p^{Db} + L_f^{Db} = \bar{L}_b^S$<br>$d^d = 0$ | $\uparrow$   | None  |
| 4. | $L_p^{Db} + L_f^{Db} = \bar{L}_b^S$<br>$d^d = 0$ | $\downarrow$ | None  |
| 5. | $L_p^{Db} + L_f^{Db} > \bar{L}_b^S$<br>$d^d = 0$ | $\uparrow$   | None  |
| 6. | $L_p^{Db} + L_f^{Db} > \bar{L}_b^S$<br>$d^d = 0$ | $\downarrow$ | Actual amounts lent $\uparrow \Rightarrow$ income, output $\uparrow$ ;<br>interest rates $\downarrow$   |
| 7. | $L_p^{Db} + L_f^{Db} > \bar{L}_b^S$<br>$d^d > 0$ | $\uparrow$   | Actual amounts lent $\downarrow \Rightarrow$ income, output $\downarrow$ ;<br>interest rates $\uparrow$ |
| 8. | $L_p^{Db} + L_f^{Db} > \bar{L}_b^S$<br>$d^d > 0$ | $\downarrow$ | Actual amounts lent $\uparrow \Rightarrow$ income, output $\uparrow$ ;<br>interest rates $\downarrow$   |

<sup>a</sup>As long as there is an excess demand for loans, interest rates tend to increase. When  $r_d$  falls these increases are less than they would have been without the reduction in  $r_d$ .

#### Open Market Operations

To this point the government has been a passive supplier-absorber of government securities. It has not consciously attempted to buy or sell governments in the open market in an attempt to influence the level



of economic activity.<sup>1</sup> In this section we consider the economic impact of such activity by the government.

Government purchases or sales of government securities affect the economy through two routes--(1) through their impact on the rate of interest on government securities and (2) through their impact on the level of bank reserves. Since these are also the primary routes through which changes in the reserve requirement affect the economy, the following analysis will be quite similar to that in the first section of this chapter.

Consider first a sale by the government of  $G^*$  dollars worth of government securities. For simplicity, we assume that this amount is purchased initially by each sector in proportion to the major parameter in their demand function for government securities. Thus,

$$G^* = dG_p + dG_f + dG_n + dG_b \quad (4.3-1)$$

$$\text{where } dG_p = \frac{g}{g + g_f + g_n + \rho} G^* \quad (4.3-2)$$

$$dG_f = \frac{g_f}{g + g_f + g_n + \rho} G^* \quad (4.3-3)$$

$$dG_n = \frac{g_n}{g + g_f + g_n + \rho} G^* \quad (4.3-4)$$

$$dG_b = \frac{\rho}{g + g_f + g_n + \rho} G^* \quad (4.3-5)$$

---

<sup>1</sup>We have allowed for government purchases or sales of government securities in the first section in conjunction with changes in the reserve requirement.

The increased holdings of G require each sector to reduce the level of other assets they hold. Thus,

$$dG_p = dC_p + dD_p + dF_p + dT_p + dN_p \quad (4.3-6)$$

$$dG_f = dC_f + dD_f + dT_f + dN_f \quad (4.3-7)$$

$$dG_n = dC_n + dD_n + dF_n \quad (4.3-8)$$

$$dG_b = dC_b + dF_b. \quad (4.3-9)$$

For each sector we can write:

$$dC_p = \frac{k_2}{k_1 + k_2 + k_3 + n_p + f} dG_p \quad (4.3-10)$$

$$dD_p = \frac{k_1}{k_1 + k_2 + k_3 + n_p + f} dG_p \quad (4.3-11)$$

$$dF_p = \frac{f}{k_1 + k_2 + k_3 + n_p + f} dG_p \quad (4.3-12)$$

$$dT_p = \frac{k_3}{k_1 + k_2 + k_3 + n_p + f} dG_p \quad (4.3-13)$$

$$dN_p = \frac{n_p}{k_1 + k_2 + k_3 + n_p + f} dG_p \quad (4.3-14)$$

$$dC_f = \frac{a_5}{a_5 + d_f + t_f + n_f} dG_f \quad (4.3-15)$$

$$dD_f = \frac{d_f}{a_5 + d_f + t_f + n_f} dG_f \quad (4.3-16)$$

$$dT_f = \frac{t_f}{a_5 + d_f + t_f + n_f} dG_f \quad (4.3-17)$$

$$dN_f = \frac{n_f}{a_5 + d_f + t_f + n_f} dG_f \quad (4.3-18)$$

$$dC_n = \frac{c_n}{c_n + d_n + b_n} dG_n \quad (4.3-19)$$

$$dD_n = \frac{d_n}{c_n + d_n + b_n} dG_n \quad (4.3-20)$$

$$dF_n = \frac{f_n}{c_n + d_n + b_n} dG_n \quad (4.3-21)$$

$$dC_b = \frac{\gamma}{\gamma + \mu} dG_b \quad (4.3-22)$$

$$dF_b = \frac{\mu}{\gamma + \mu} dG_b \quad (4.3-23)$$

The immediate result of this first round readjustment in assets is that deposits in the banks have been reduced by

$$\begin{aligned} d(D+T) &= dD_p + dD_f + dD_n + dT_p + dT_f \\ &= \frac{k_1 + k_3}{k_1 + k_2 + k_3 + n_p + f} (dG_p) + \\ &\quad \frac{d_f + t_f}{a_5 + d_f + t_f + n_f} (dG_f) + \frac{d_n}{c_n + d_n + b_n} (dG_n), \end{aligned} \quad (4.3-24)$$

which results in a reserve deficiency equal to

$$R \text{ def } 1 = (1 - r) d(D + T). \quad (4.3-25)$$

The banks are now forced to reduce their asset holdings in an amount equal to the reserve deficiency. Thus,

$$R \text{ def } 1 = dC_{b1} + dG_{b1} + dF_{b1}. \quad (4.3-26)$$

Once again, the nonbank, private sectors must be induced to expand their holding of G and F. (We assume that, in this case, the government will not buy any of its securities from the banks.) Offsetting reductions in these sectors' holdings of C, D and T must result. We have then,

$$dG_{b1} = dG_{p1} + dG_{f1} + dG_{n1} \quad (4.3-27)$$

$$dF_{b1} = dF_{p1} + dF_{n1}, \quad (4.3-28)$$

where

$$dG_{p1} = \frac{g}{g + g_f + g_n} dG_{b1} \quad (4.3-29)$$

$$dG_{f1} = \frac{g_f}{g + g_f + g_n} dG_{b1} \quad (4.3-30)$$

$$dG_{n1} = \frac{g_n}{g + g_f + g_n} dG_{b1} \quad (4.3-31)$$

$$dF_{p1} = \frac{f}{f + b_n} dF_{b1} \quad (4.3-32)$$

$$dF_{n1} = \frac{b_n}{f + b_n} dF_{b1}. \quad (4.3-33)$$

The resultant decreases in assets of the nonbank-private sectors are given by

$$dC_{p1} = \frac{k_2}{k_1 + k_2 + k_3 + n_p} (dG_{p1} + dF_{p1}) \quad (4.3-34)$$

$$dD_{p1} = \frac{k_1}{k_1 + k_2 + k_3 + n_p} (dG_{p1} + dF_{p1}) \quad (4.3-35)$$

$$dT_{p1} = \frac{k_3}{k_1 + k_2 + k_3 + n_p} (dG_{p1} + dF_{p1}) \quad (4.3-36)$$

$$dN_{p1} = \frac{n_p}{k_1 + k_2 + k_3 + n_p} (dG_{p1} + dF_{p1}) \quad (4.3-37)$$

$$dC_{f1} = \frac{a_5}{a_5 + d_f + t_f + n_f} dG_{f1} \quad (4.3-38)$$

$$dD_{f1} = \frac{d_f}{a_5 + d_f + t_f + n_f} dG_{f1} \quad (4.3-39)$$

$$dN_{f1} = \frac{n_f}{a_5 + d_f + t_f + n_f} dG_{f1} \quad (4.3-40)$$

$$dT_{f1} = \frac{t_f}{a_5 + d_f + t_f + n_f} dG_{f1} \quad (4.3-41)$$

$$dC_{n1} = \frac{c_n}{c_n + d_n} (dG_{n1} + dF_{n1}) \quad (4.3-42)$$

$$dD_{n1} = \frac{d_n}{c_n + d_n} (dG_{n1} + dF_{n1}). \quad (4.3-43)$$

These asset readjustments result in a second reserve deficiency,

R def 2, given by

$$R \text{ def } 2 = (1-r) \left[ \frac{(k_1 + k_3)}{k_1 + k_2 + k_3 + n_p} (dG_{p1} + dF_{p1}) + \right. \quad (4.3-44)$$

$$\left[ \frac{d_f + t_f}{a_5 + d_f + n_f + t_f} (dG_{f1}) + \frac{d_n}{c_n + d_n} (dG_{n1} + dF_{n1}) \right].$$

As in the first section of this chapter we can write the banks' reduction of their asset holdings for any particular stage of the process as:

$$dG_{bi} = \frac{\rho}{\rho + \gamma + \mu} R \text{ def } i-1 \quad (4.3-45)$$

$$dC_{bi} = \frac{\gamma}{\rho + \gamma + \mu} R \text{ def } i-1 \quad (4.3-46)$$

$$dF_{bi} = \frac{\mu}{\rho + \gamma + \mu} R \text{ def } i-1. \quad (4.3-47)$$

The problem can again be reduced to finding the general term in the infinite series  $\sum_{i=1}^{\infty} (R \text{ def } i)$  and then finding the limit to which this series converges. The expressions for  $R \text{ def } 1$  and  $R \text{ def } 2$  are not comparable because of differences in the constant and variable terms in each. It is necessary therefore to examine some of the higher order reserve deficiencies. The general expression for these terms is

$$\begin{aligned} R \text{ def } j = (1 - r) & \left[ \frac{k_1 + k_3}{k_1 + k_2 + k_3 + n_p} (dG_{pj-1} + dF_{pj-1}) \right. \\ & + \frac{d_f + t_f}{a_5 + d_f + n_f + t_f} (dG_{fj-1}) + \frac{d_n}{c_n + d_n} \\ & \left. (dG_{nj-1} + dF_{nj-1}) \right] \end{aligned} \quad (4.3-48)$$

for  $j \geq 3$ . The expressions for the  $dG$  and  $dF$  can be written as:

$$dG_{p1} = \left( \frac{g}{g + g_f + g_n} \right) \left( \frac{\rho}{\rho + \gamma + \mu} \right) R \text{ def } i-1$$

$$dG_{fi} = \left( \frac{g_f}{g + g_f + g_n} \right) \left( \frac{\rho}{\rho + \gamma + \mu} \right) R \text{ def } i-1$$

$$dG_{ni} = \left( \frac{g_n}{g + g_f + g_n} \right) \left( \frac{\rho}{\rho + \gamma + \mu} \right) R \text{ def } i-1$$

$$dF_{pi} = \left( \frac{f}{f + b_n} \right) \left( \frac{\mu}{\rho + \gamma + \mu} \right) R \text{ def } i-1$$

$$dF_{ni} = \left( \frac{b_n}{f + b_n} \right) \left( \frac{\mu}{\rho + \gamma + \mu} \right) R \text{ def } i-1.$$

Substituting these expressions into 4.3-48 we obtain an expression for  $R \text{ def } j$  in terms of  $R \text{ def } j-1$ :

$$R \text{ def } j = (1-r) \left( \frac{k_1 + k_3}{k_1 + k_2 + k_3 + n_p} \right) R \text{ def } j-1 \quad (4.3-49)$$

$$\begin{aligned} & \left[ \left( \frac{g}{g + g_f + g_n} \right) \left( \frac{\rho}{\rho + \gamma + \mu} \right) + \left( \frac{f}{f + b_n} \right) \right. \\ & \left. \left( \frac{\mu}{\rho + \gamma + \mu} \right) \right] + (1-r) \left( \frac{d_f + t_f}{a_5 + d_f + n_f + t_f} \right) \\ & R \text{ def } j-1 \left[ \left( \frac{g_f}{g + g_f + g_n} \right) \left( \frac{\rho}{\rho + \gamma + \mu} \right) \right] + \\ & (1-r) \frac{d_n}{c_n + d_n} R \text{ def } j-1 \left[ \left( \frac{g_n}{g + g_f + g_n} \right) \right. \\ & \left. \left( \frac{\rho}{\rho + \gamma + \mu} \right) + \left( \frac{b_n}{f + b_n} \right) \left( \frac{\mu}{\rho + \gamma + \mu} \right) \right]. \end{aligned}$$

Dividing through by  $R \text{ def } j-1$ ,

$$\frac{R \text{ def } j}{R \text{ def } j-1} = Q_G^* = (1-r) \left\{ \frac{k_1 + k_3}{k_1 + k_2 + k_3 + n_p} \right. \quad (4.3-50)$$

$$\begin{aligned} & \left[ \left( \frac{g}{g + g_f + g_n} \right) \left( \frac{\rho}{\rho + \gamma + \mu} \right) + \left( \frac{f}{f + b_n} \right) \right. \\ & \left. \left( \frac{\mu}{\rho + \gamma + \mu} \right) \right] + \frac{d_f + t_f}{a_5 + d_f + n_f + t_f} \\ & \left[ \left( \frac{g_f}{g + g_f + g_n} \right) \left( \frac{\rho}{\rho + \gamma + \mu} \right) \right] + \frac{d_n}{c_n + d_n} \\ & \left[ \left( \frac{g_n}{g + g_f + g_n} \right) \left( \frac{\rho}{\rho + \gamma + \mu} \right) + \left( \frac{b_n}{f + b_n} \right) \right. \\ & \left. \left( \frac{\mu}{\rho + \gamma + \mu} \right) \right]. \end{aligned}$$

Equation 4.3-50 holds for all  $j \geq 3$ . Consequently,

$$\begin{aligned} \frac{R \text{ def } 3}{R \text{ def } 2} &= Q_G^* \Rightarrow R \text{ def } 3 = Q_G^* R \text{ def } 2 \\ \frac{R \text{ def } 4}{R \text{ def } 3} &= Q_G^* \Rightarrow R \text{ def } 4 = Q_G^* R \text{ def } 2 \\ &\cdot \\ &\cdot \\ &\cdot \\ \frac{R \text{ def } i}{R \text{ def } i-1} &= Q_G^* \Rightarrow R \text{ def } i = Q_G^{i-2} R \text{ def } 2. \end{aligned} \quad (4.3-51)$$

The total reserve deficiency is therefore given by

$$\begin{aligned} R \text{ def } T &= R \text{ def } 1 + R \text{ def } 2 + \sum_{i=3}^{\infty} R \text{ def } i \\ &= R \text{ def } 1 + R \text{ def } 2 + \sum_{i=3}^{\infty} Q_G^{i-2} R \text{ def } 2. \end{aligned}$$



As we have seen earlier, this infinite series converges to  $\frac{R \text{ def } 2}{1 - Q_G^*}$  since  $0 < Q_G^* < 1$ . The total reserve deficiency is therefore

$$\begin{aligned} R \text{ def } T &= R \text{ def } 1 + R \text{ def } 2 + \frac{R \text{ def } 2}{1 - Q_G^*} \\ &= R \text{ def } 1 + R \text{ def } 2 \left[ 1 + \frac{1}{1 - Q_G^*} \right]. \end{aligned} \quad (4.3-52)$$

Once again, this expression will not be written out in its full gory grandeur.

Having obtained the expression for  $R \text{ def } T$  we are once again in a position to write out the total impacts on asset holdings of the government's role of  $G^*$  dollars worth of government securities. For the banks, we have:

$$dC_{bt} = \frac{\gamma}{\rho + \gamma + \mu} R \text{ def } T \quad (4.3-53)$$

$$dG_{bt} = \frac{\rho}{\rho + \gamma + \mu} R \text{ def } T + \frac{\rho}{\rho + g + g_f + g_n} G^* \quad (4.3-54)$$

$$dF_{bt} = \frac{\mu}{\rho + \gamma + \mu} R \text{ def } T. \quad (4.3-55)$$

The nonbank private sectors have increased their holdings of government and firms' securities by

$$\begin{aligned} dG_{pt} &= \frac{g}{g + g + g} \left[ \frac{\rho}{\rho + \gamma + \mu} R \text{ def } T + \right. \\ &\quad \left. \frac{\rho}{\rho + g + g_f + g_n} G^* \right] + \frac{g}{g + g + g_f + g_n} G^*. \end{aligned} \quad (4.3-56)$$

$$dG_{nt} = \frac{g_n}{g + g_f + g_n} \left[ \frac{\rho}{\rho + \gamma + \mu} R \text{ def } T + \frac{\rho}{\rho + g + g_f + g_n} G^* \right] + \frac{g_n}{g + g_f + g_n} G^* \quad (4.3-57)$$

$$dG_{ft} = \frac{g_f}{g + g_f + g_n} \left[ \frac{\rho}{\rho + \gamma + \mu} R \text{ def } T + \frac{\rho}{\rho + g + g_f + g_n} G^* \right] + \frac{g_f}{g + g_f + g_n} G^* \quad (4.3-58)$$

$$dF_{pt} = \frac{f}{f + b_n} \left[ \frac{\mu}{\rho + \gamma + \mu} R \text{ def } T \right] \quad (4.3-59)$$

$$dF_{nt} = \frac{b_n}{f + b_n} \left[ \frac{\mu}{\rho + \gamma + \mu} R \text{ def } T \right] . \quad (4.3-60)$$

Summing over each sector,

$$d(G_p + F_p)_t = \frac{g}{g + g_f + g_n} \left[ \frac{\rho}{\rho + \gamma + \mu} R \text{ def } T + \frac{\rho}{\rho + g + g_f + g_n} G^* \right] + \frac{g}{g + g_f + g_n} G^* + \frac{f}{f + b_n} \left[ \frac{\mu}{\rho + \gamma + \mu} R \text{ def } T \right] \quad (4.3-61)$$

$$d(G_n + F_n)_t = \frac{g_n}{g + g_f + g_n} \left[ \frac{\rho}{\rho + \gamma + \mu} R \text{ def } T + \frac{\rho}{\rho + g + g_f + g_n} G^* \right] + \frac{g_n}{g + g_f + g_n} G^* + \frac{b_n}{f + b_n} \left[ \frac{\mu}{\rho + \gamma + \mu} R \text{ def } T \right] . \quad (4.3-62)$$

$$dG_{ft} = 4.3-58$$

The resulting decreases in the nonbank private sectors asset holdings are given by the same relations as 4.1-73 through 4.1-82 and will not be repeated here (even though the expressions for  $d(G + F)_{pt}$  and  $d(G + F)_{nt}$  are not the same as in the first section of this chapter).

The total change in the money stock,  $dM_{tG}^*$ , is given by

$$\begin{aligned} dM_{tG}^* = & \frac{k_2 + k_1}{k_1 + k_2 + k_3 + np} d(G + F)_{pt} + d(G + F)_{nt} \quad (4.3-63) \\ & + \frac{a_5 + d_f}{a_5 + d_f + n_f + t_f} dG_f + \frac{\gamma}{\rho + \gamma + \mu} \\ & [R \text{ def } T] + \frac{\gamma}{\gamma + \mu} G^*. \end{aligned}$$

All the terms here are the same as those in 4.1-87 with the exception of  $\frac{\gamma}{\gamma + \mu} G^*$ , which represents the portion of the banks' initial purchase of government securities paid for by drawing down the banks' currency balances. In the case under discussion  $dM_{tG}^*$  is, of course, negative. The same arguments hold for the situation in which the government buys securities. Only the signs need be changed to protect the innocent; otherwise, the relations are identical to those above.

We turn now to consider the effects of open market operations on the prices of securities (on the rates of interest). In the case under discussion, prices must be lowered (rates increased) on government and firms' securities to induce the nonbank private sectors to expand their holdings of these securities. The aggregate demands are:

$$G_a^D = gY + A_{26}\bar{r}_p + g_n N + A_{15}\bar{r}_n + g_f(PX) + A_7\bar{r}_f \quad (4.3-64)$$

$$F_a^D = b_n N + A_{17}\bar{r}_n + n_p Y + A_{30}\bar{r}_p. \quad (4.3-65)$$

We have omitted the banks' demand for government securities and firms' securities since the new price must induce the nonbank private sectors to absorb the appropriate amount of securities, e.g.  $dG_{pt} + dG_{nt} + dG_{ft}$ , and  $dF_{pt} + dF_{nt}$ . Revisiting 4.3-64 and 65 in terms of only the variables directly affected by open market operations:

$$G_a^D = A_{26}\bar{r}_p + g_n N + A_{15}\bar{r}_n + A_7\bar{r}_f$$

$$F_a^D = b_n N + A_{17}\bar{r}_n + A_{30}\bar{r}_p.$$

Then it must be true that

$$dG_a^D = dG_{pt} + dG_{nt} + dG_{ft} = A_{26}d\bar{r}_p + g_n dN + A_7 d\bar{r}_f + A_{15}d\bar{r}_n$$

$$dF_a^D = dF_{pt} + dF_{nt} = b_n dN + A_{17}d\bar{r}_n + A_{30}d\bar{r}_p.$$

We know that  $dG_{pt} + dG_{nt} + dG_{ft} = \frac{\rho}{\rho + \gamma + \mu} R \text{ def } T + \frac{\rho}{\rho + g + g_f + g_n} G^*$   
 $+ \frac{g + g_f + g_n}{\rho + g + g_f + g_n} G^* = \frac{\rho}{\rho + \gamma + \mu} R \text{ def } T + G^*$  and that  $dF_{pt} + dF_{nt} =$

$\frac{\mu}{\rho + \gamma + \mu} R \text{ def } T$ , so that

$$\frac{\rho}{\rho + \gamma + \mu} R \text{ def } T + G^* = A_{26}d\bar{r}_p + g_n dN + A_{15}d\bar{r}_n + A_7 d\bar{r}_f \quad (4.3-66)$$

$$\frac{\mu}{\rho + \gamma + \mu} R \text{ def } T = b_n dN + A_{17}d\bar{r}_n + A_{30}d\bar{r}_p \quad (4.3-67)$$

$$\text{or } \frac{\rho}{\rho + \gamma + \mu} R \text{ def } T + G^* = (a_7 + a_{15} + a_{26}) dr_f + \quad (4.3-68)$$

$$(b_7 + b_{15} + b_{26}) dr_g$$

$$\frac{\mu}{\rho + \gamma + \mu} R \text{ def } T = b_n dN + (a_{17} + a_{30}) dr_f + \quad (4.3-69)$$

$$(b_{17} + b_{30}) dr_g.$$

Solving 4.3-68 and 69 simultaneously yields the changes necessary in the rates of interest ( $1/dP$ ) necessary to induce the increased holdings of  $G$  and  $F$  in terms of  $R \text{ def } T$ ,  $dN$ , and  $G^*$ .

The resulting expressions for  $dr_f$  and  $dr_g$  are quite similar to those derived in section 1, except for the addition of the term  $G^*$ :

$$dr_{gG}^* = R \text{ def } T \left[ \frac{\rho}{\rho + \gamma + \mu} - \frac{a_7 + a_{15} + a_{26}}{a_{17} + a_{30}} \right. \\ \left. \left( \frac{\mu}{\rho + \gamma + \mu} \right) \right] + dN \left[ \left( \frac{a_7 + a_{15} + a_{26}}{a_{17} + a_{30}} \right) b_n - g_n \right] \\ \frac{b_7 + b_{15} + b_{26} - \left( \frac{a_7 + a_{15} + a_{26}}{a_{17} + a_{30}} \right) (b_{17} + b_{30})}{\quad} \quad (4.3-70)$$

$$dr_{fG}^* = \frac{R \text{ def } T}{a_{17} + a_{30}} \left\{ \frac{\mu}{\rho + \gamma + \mu} - (b_{17} + b_{30}) \right. \\ \left. \left[ \frac{\frac{\rho}{\rho + \gamma + \mu} - \frac{(a_7 + a_{15} + a_{26})}{(a_{17} + a_{30})} \left( \frac{\mu}{\rho + \gamma + \mu} \right)}{b_7 + b_{15} + b_{26} - (b_{17} + b_{30})} \right] \right\} \\ - \frac{dN}{a_{17} + a_{30}} \left\{ b_n + (b_{17} + b_{30}) \right. \quad (4.3-71)$$

$$\left[ \frac{b_n \frac{(a_7 + a_{15} + a_{26})}{a_{17} + a_{30}} - g_n}{b_7 + b_{15} + b_{26} - (b_{17} + b_{30})} \right] + \frac{(b_{17} + b_{30}) G^*}{(a_{17} + a_{30}) [b_7 + b_{15} + b_{26} - (b_{17} + b_{30})]}$$

As in section one of this chapter, the expressions for  $dm_{tG}^*$ ,  $dr_{gG}^*$ , and  $dr_{fG}^*$  enable us to calculate the other effects of open market operations on the economy when combined with the various rates of change calculated in Chapter III.

We will examine these other effects for the three tools of monetary policy in the next section.

#### Summary and Conclusions--The Effects and Effectiveness of the Tools of Monetary Policy

In the first three sections of this chapter we developed, with some rigor, expressions for the effects of the various tools of monetary policy on the money stock, the rate on government securities, and the rate on firms' securities. In this section our primary goal is to compare the effects of these tools and their effectiveness in combating both inflation and unemployment.

First, as far as the effects of these tools are concerned, it is clear that changes in the rediscount rate affect the economy through different channels than those through which both changes in the reserve requirement and open market operations work. Changes in the rediscount rate work primarily through (when they have any impact at all) their impact on the amount of loans actually made by the banking system.

Changes in the amount of loans in turn affects the rates charged by the banks as well as the aggregate demand for both the consumer and capital good. Changes in the money stock are not an important channel through which the rediscount rate affects the economy. On the other hand, both changes in the reserve requirement and open market operations have as their prime avenues of influence changes in the money stock and in the rates on government and firms' securities.

Second, while their effects are very similar, changes in the reserve requirement have one direct effect not shared by open market operations. Changes in  $r$  affect the amount willing to be lent per dollar of deposits as well as the total amount of loans supplied through changes in the amount of deposits. Open market operations do not affect the quantity of loans supplied per dollar of deposits except insofar as changes in rates of interest resulting from open market operations may change this figure. (This indirect effect is also shared by changes in reserve requirements.) Thus, given a particular change in the reserve requirement and an open market operation that both cause the same change in the banks' reserves, the change in  $r$  results in a greater change in the quantity of bank loans supplied than does the open market operation.

Third, an open market operations results in both buying and selling of government securities by the banking system while the banks either only buy or only sell government securities given a change in  $r$ . This difference is of little importance.

We turn now to a direct comparison of open market operations and changes in reserve requirements based on the relations developed in

the first and third sections of this chapter. The analysis will be divided into two major parts: first, given a  $dr$  and  $G^*$  that produce equal changes in the banks reserves, what are the relationships between the resultant changes in the money stock,  $r_g$ , and  $r_f$ , and second, what combinations of  $dr$  and  $G^*$  cause an equal change in the banks' reserves?

The impacts of  $dr$  and  $G^*$  on  $M$ ,  $r_f$ , and  $r_g$  are:

$$dM_{tr} = \frac{\gamma}{\rho + \gamma + \mu} R \text{ def } T + \frac{k_2 + k_1}{k_1 + k_2 + k_3 + n_p} d(G+F)_{pt} \quad (4.1-87)$$

$$+ d(G+F)_{nt} + \frac{a_5 + d_f}{a_5 + d_f + n_f + t_f} dG_{ft}$$

$$R \text{ def } T \left[ \frac{\rho}{\rho + \gamma + \mu} - \frac{a_7 + a_{15} + a_{26}}{a_{17} + a_{30}} \left( \frac{\mu}{\rho + \gamma + \mu} \right) \right]$$

$$+ dN \left[ b_n \frac{a_7 + a_{15} + a_{26}}{a_{17} + a_{30}} - g_n \right] \quad (4.1-94)$$

$$dr_{gr} = \frac{b_7 + b_{15} + b_{26} - \frac{a_7 + a_{15} + a_{26}}{a_{17} + a_{30}} (b_{17} + b_{30})}{b_7 + b_{15} + b_{26} - \frac{a_7 + a_{15} + a_{26}}{a_{17} + a_{30}} (b_{17} + b_{30})}$$

$$dr_{fr} = \frac{R \text{ def } T}{a_{17} + a_{30}} \left\{ \frac{\mu}{\rho + \gamma + \mu} - (b_{17} + b_{30}) \right\} \quad (4.1-95)$$

$$\left[ \frac{\frac{\rho}{\rho + \gamma + \mu} - \frac{(a_7 + a_{15} + a_{26})}{a_{17} + a_{30}} \left( \frac{\mu}{\rho + \gamma + \mu} \right)}{b_7 + b_{15} + b_{26} - (b_{17} + b_{30})} \right] \} - dN$$

$$\left\{ b_n - (b_{17} + b_{30}) \left[ \frac{\frac{b_n (a_7 + a_{15} + a_{26})}{a_{17} + a_{30}} - g_n}{b_7 + b_{15} + b_{26} - (b_{17} + b_{30})} \right] \right\}$$



$$dM_{tG}^* = \frac{k_2 + k_1}{k_1 + k_2 + k_3 + n_p} d(G+F)_{pt} + d(G+F)_{nt} + \quad (4.3-63)$$

$$\frac{a_5 + d_f}{a_5 + d_f + n_f + t_f} dG_f + \frac{\gamma}{\rho + \gamma + \mu} R \text{ def } T +$$

$$\frac{\gamma}{\gamma + \mu} G^*$$

$$R \text{ def } T \left[ \frac{\rho}{\rho + \gamma + \mu} - \frac{a_7 + a_{15} + a_{26}}{a_{17} + a_{30}} \right]$$

$$dr_{gG}^* = \left( \frac{\mu}{\rho + \gamma + \mu} \right) ] + d_n \left[ \left( \frac{a_7 + a_{15} + a_{26}}{a_{17} + a_{30}} \right) \right]$$

$$\frac{b_n - g_n + G^*}{b_7 + b_{15} + b_{26} - \left( \frac{a_7 + a_{15} + a_{26}}{a_{17} + a_{30}} \right)} \quad (4.3-70)$$

$$(b_{17} + b_{30})$$

$$dr_{fG}^* = \frac{R \text{ def } T}{a_{17} + a_{30}} \left\{ \frac{\mu}{\rho + \gamma + \mu} - (b_{17} + b_{30}) \right\} \quad (4.3-71)$$

$$\left[ \frac{\frac{\rho}{\rho + \gamma + \mu} - \frac{a_7 + a_{15} + a_{26}}{a_{17} + a_{30}} \left( \frac{\mu}{\rho + \gamma + \mu} \right)}{b_7 + b_{15} + b_{26} - (b_{17} + b_{30})} \right] \}$$

$$- \frac{d_n}{a_{17} + a_{30}} \left\{ b_n + (b_{17} + b_{30}) \right\}$$

$$\left[ \frac{\frac{b_n (a_7 + a_{15} + a_{30})}{a_{17} + a_{30}} - g_n}{b_7 + b_{15} + b_{26} - (b_{17} + b_{30})} \right] \} +$$

$$\frac{b_{17} + b_{30} G^*}{(a_{17} + a_{30}) [b_7 + b_{15} + b_{26} - (b_{17} + b_{30})]}$$

Comparison of  $dM_{tG}^*$  and  $dM_{tr}$  shows the two expressions to be (superficially) identical with the exception of the term  $\frac{\gamma}{\gamma + \mu} G^*$  in  $dM_{tG}^*$ . This term is the banks' initial change in its currency holdings as a result of its first purchase or sale of government securities. If we can be sure that equal changes in reserves imply equal changes in the nonbank private sectors holdings of government and firms' securities, then it would seem, even though  $G^*$  and  $dr$  resulted in an equal change in reserves, that  $G^*$  had a greater impact on the money stock. To be sure of this conclusion, we must examine the relations between the terms  $d(G+F)_{pt}$ ,  $d(G+F)_{nt}$ , and  $dG_f$  in the two equations. These terms are given by:

$$d(G+F)_{ptG}^* = \frac{g}{g + g_f + g_n} \left[ \frac{\rho}{\rho + \gamma + \mu} R \text{ def } T + \right. \quad (4.3-65)$$

$$\left. \frac{\rho}{\rho + g + g_f + g_n} G^* \right] + \frac{g}{\rho + g + g_f + g_n} G^* \\ + \frac{f}{f + b_n} \left[ \frac{\mu}{\rho + \gamma + \mu} R \text{ def } T \right]$$

$$d(G+F)_{ntG}^* = \frac{g_n}{g + g_f + g_n} \left[ \frac{\rho}{\rho + \gamma + \mu} R \text{ def } T + \right. \quad (4.3-62)$$

$$\left. \frac{\rho}{\rho + g + g_f + g_n} G^* \right] + \frac{g_n}{\rho + g + g_f + g_n} G^* \\ + \frac{b_n}{f + b_n} \left[ \frac{\mu}{\rho + \gamma + \mu} R \text{ def } T \right]$$

$$dG_{gtG}^* = \frac{g_f}{g + g_f + g_n} \left[ \frac{\rho}{\rho + \gamma + \mu} R \text{ def } T + \right. \quad (4.3-58)$$

$$\left. \frac{\rho}{\rho + g + g_f + g_n} G^* \right] + \frac{g_n}{g + g_f + g_n} G^*$$

$$d(G+F)_{ptr} = \frac{g}{g + g_f + g_n} \left( \frac{\rho}{\rho + \gamma + \mu} R \text{ def } T - dG_{go} \right) \quad (4.1-71)$$

$$+ \frac{f}{f + b_n} \left( \frac{\mu}{\rho + \gamma + \mu} R \text{ def } T \right)$$

$$d(G+F)_{ntr} = \frac{g_n}{g + g_f + g_n} \left( \frac{\rho}{\rho + \gamma + \mu} R \text{ def } T - dG_{go} \right) \quad (4.1-72)$$

$$+ \frac{b_n}{f + b_n} \left( \frac{\mu}{\rho + \gamma + \mu} R \text{ def } T \right)$$

$$dG_{ftr} = \frac{g_f}{g + g_f + g_n} \left( \frac{\rho}{\rho + \gamma + \mu} R \text{ def } T - dG_{go} \right) \quad (4.1-68)$$

Comparison of these terms shows unambiguously that  $d(G+F)_{ptG}^* > d(G+F)_{ptr}$ ,  $d(G+F)_{ntG}^* > d(G+F)_{ntr}$ , and  $dG_{ftG}^* > dG_{ftr}$ . This is not surprising as one of the chief characteristics of open market operations is that they change the total amount of government securities held by the private sectors, while changing  $r$  does not have this effect (except to the extent the government decides as a matter of policy to either buy or sell governments in conjunction with the change in  $r$ ). Consequently, we can conclude unambiguously that, when  $G^*$  and  $dr$  result in the same change in banks' reserves, that the impact of  $G^*$  on the money stock will be larger than that of  $dr$ . Furthermore, comparison of the expressions

for  $dr_f$  and  $dr_g$  also shows that  $dr_{gG}^* > dr_{gr}$  and  $dr_{fG}^* > dr_{fr}$ . Thus, we can conclude that, even though both  $dr$  and  $G^*$  result in the same change in the reserves of the banking system,  $G^*$  (an open market operation) will have a greater impact on the level of economic activity since  $G^*$  results in greater changes in  $M$ ,  $r_f$  and  $r_g$  than does  $dr$ .<sup>1</sup>

The next question to which we turn is what combination of  $dr$  and  $G^*$  result in an equal change in banks' reserves. The expressions for the total change in banks' reserves are:

$$R \text{ def } T_r = R \text{ def } 1_r + R \text{ def } 2_r + R \text{ def } 3_r \left(1 + \frac{1}{1 - Q_r}\right) \quad (4.3-61)$$

$$R \text{ def } T_G^* = R \text{ def } 1_G^* + R \text{ def } 2_G^* \left[1 + \frac{1}{1 - Q_G^*}\right] \quad (4.3-52)$$

where  $Q_r = Q_G^* - dr$ , so that

when  $dr < 0$ ,  $\left(1 + \frac{1}{1 - Q_r}\right) > \left(1 + \frac{1}{1 - Q_G^*}\right)$  and vice-versa

when  $dr > 0$ .

Rather than base this analysis on a complete investigation of  $R \text{ def } T_r$  and  $R \text{ def } T_G^*$  we shall assume that we can get an accurate approximation of the answer from a comparison of the first changes in the banks' reserves.

---

<sup>1</sup>We do not mean to stress these differences between changes in the reserve requirements and open market operations at the expense of institutional differences which the model does not take into account. Some of these differences are the fact that open market operations work slowly relative to changes in reserve requirements, the possibility that bankers view reserves created by changes in reserve requirements differently than reserves generated by open market operations, etc.

$$R \text{ def } l_r = dr(D + T)$$

$$R \text{ def } l_G^* = (1 - r) \left[ \left( \frac{k_1 + k_3}{k_1 + k_2 + k_3 + n_p} \right) \left( \frac{g}{g + g_f + g_n} \right) G^* + \right. \\ \left. \left( \frac{d_f + t_f}{a_5 + d_f + n_f + t_f} \right) \left( \frac{g_f}{g + g_f + g_n} \right) G^* + \right. \\ \left. \left( \frac{d_n}{c_n + d_n + b_n} \right) \left( \frac{g_n}{g + g_f + g_n} \right) G^* \right]$$

Thus, for  $R \text{ def } l_r$  to equal  $R \text{ def } l_G^*$ , it must be true that

$$\frac{G^*}{dr} = \frac{D + T}{(1-r) \left[ \left( \frac{k_1 + k_3}{k_1 + k_2 + k_3 + n_p} \right) \left( \frac{g}{g + g_f + g_n} \right) + \right.} \quad (4.4-1) \\ \left. \left( \frac{d_f + t_f}{a_5 + d_f + n_f + t_f} \right) \left( \frac{g_f}{g + g_f + g_n} \right) + \right. \\ \left. \left( \frac{d_n}{c_n + d_n + b_n} \right) \left( \frac{g_n}{g + g_f + g_n} \right) \right]$$

The denominator of 4.4-1 is clearly less than one. Call it dem. Then to produce the same first change in reserves as a one percentage point change in  $r$ , open market operations in an amount equal to

$$\frac{G^*}{.01} = (D + T) \frac{1}{\text{dem}} = G^* = .01(D + T) \frac{1}{\text{dem}} \quad (4.4-2)$$

must be undertaken. The exact size of this  $G^*$  depends, of course, on the sizes of the parameters in the denominator of 4.4-1 and on the size of  $D + T$ . Even though it is recognized that only looking at the first reserve change probably provides an inaccurate answer to our question, 4.4-2 certainly underscores the strength of changes in the reserve

requirement as a monetary tool when one considers the size of  $G^*$  necessary to produce the same first change in reserves as a 1 percentage point change in  $r$ .

We conclude this comparison of changes in  $r$  and open market operations by noting that an open market operation smaller than the  $G^*$  in 4.4-2 will produce the same change in the money stock and in the rates on securities as does a 1 percentage point change in  $r$ . This is obvious since we have already shown that a  $G^*$  which causes the same total change in reserves as a particular  $dr$  will have a greater impact on  $M$ ,  $r_f$ , and  $r_g$  than the change in the reserve requirement. This observation also underscores the strength of  $dr$  since a  $G^*$  of substantial size would have to be undertaken to produce equivalent changes in  $M$ ,  $r_f$ , and  $r_g$ .

We turn now to a consideration of the effectiveness of these tools of monetary policy in combatting the problems of inflation and unemployment. With regard to changes in the rediscount rate, Table 10 shows that the only circumstances in which it has any impact on the economy are when there is an excess demand for bank loans. Typically, excess demand situations would correspond to periods of inflation while one of the characteristics of unemployment would be an excess supply of bank loans. Thus, we can conclude that changes in the rediscount rate will be particularly ineffective in combatting unemployment. The effectiveness of this tool is limited to combatting inflation. Even here, the impact of any changes in  $r_d$  is likely to be small.

This asymmetry of the affects of changes in the rediscount rate is not shared by changes in the reserve requirement and open market operations.

As indicated earlier, the arguments above, though framed in terms of reductions in total reserves, hold equally well for changes in  $r$  and open market operations aimed at increasing the reserves of the banking system. Thus, there is little to choose between changes in reserve requirements and open market operations when faced by either unemployment or inflation.<sup>1</sup> The equations below measure the impact of changes in  $r$  and open market operations on the variables of the economy, and illustrate the channels through which these tools operate in achieving their results.

The immediate impact on  $Y$  as a result of either  $dr$  or  $G^*$  is the sum of three effects: (1) the impact on  $Y$  of the change in the money stock resulting from  $dr$  or  $G^*$ ; (2) the impact on  $Y$  of the change in  $r_f$  resulting from either  $dr$  or  $G^*$ ; and the impact on  $Y$  of the change in  $r_g$  resulting from either  $dr$  or  $G^*$ . Thus we can write:

$$dY_r = \frac{\partial Y}{\partial M} dM_r + \frac{\partial Y}{\partial r_f} dr_{fr} + \frac{\partial Y}{\partial r_g} dr_{gr} \quad (4.4-3)$$

$$dY_G^* = \frac{\partial Y}{\partial M} dM_G^* + \frac{\partial Y}{\partial r_f} dr_{fG}^* + \frac{\partial Y}{\partial r_g} dr_{gG}^*. \quad (4.4-4)$$

Similar expressions can be written out for the effects on  $X_c$ ,  $X_k$ ,  $P_c$  and  $P_k$ :

---

<sup>1</sup>Except institutional factors which, it has been argued, prevent fractional and frequent changes in the reserve requirement. These arguments have no economic validity, but are probably valid from other points of view.

$$dX_{c(k)r(G^*)} = \frac{\partial X_{c(k)}}{\partial M} dM_{r(G^*)} + \frac{\partial X_{c(k)}}{\partial r_f} dr_{fr(G^*)} + \frac{\partial X_{c(k)}}{\partial r_g} dr_{gr(G^*)} \quad (4.4-5)$$

$$dP_{c(k)r(G^*)} = \frac{\partial P_{c(k)}}{\partial M} dM_{r(G^*)} + \frac{\partial P_{c(k)}}{\partial r_f} dr_{fr(G^*)} + \frac{\partial P_{c(k)}}{\partial r_g} dr_{gr(G^*)} \quad (4.4-6)$$

where the terms in the parentheses are used to indicate the other variables for which separate equations could be written. Equations 4.4-5 and 4.4-6 actually represent eight different expressions.

Rather than reproduce the explicit forms of all the relations 4.4-3 through 4.4-6, we will present only that one for 4.4-3 as an illustration.

$$\begin{aligned} dY_r = & \left[ \frac{\partial X_c}{\partial M} P_c + \frac{\partial P_c}{\partial M} X_c + \frac{\partial X_k}{\partial M} P_k + \frac{\partial P_k}{\partial M} X_k + \frac{\partial \pi_b}{\partial M} + \frac{\partial \pi_n}{\partial M} + \right. \\ & r_g \frac{\partial G_p}{\partial M} + \frac{\partial r_g}{\partial M} G_p + \frac{\partial r_t}{\partial M} T_p + \frac{\partial T_p}{\partial M} r_t + \frac{\partial r_n}{\partial M} N_p + \frac{\partial N_p}{\partial M} r_n + \\ & \frac{\partial r_f}{\partial M} F_p + \frac{\partial F_p}{\partial M} r_f - \left( \frac{\partial r_{bf}}{\partial M} L_{bf} + \frac{\partial L_{bf}}{\partial M} r_{bf} + \frac{\partial r_{nf}}{\partial M} L_{nf} + \right. \\ & \left. \left. \frac{\partial L_{nf}}{\partial M} r_{nf} \right) \right] \left[ \frac{\gamma}{\rho + \gamma + \mu} R \text{ def } T_r + \left( \frac{k_2 + k_1}{k_1 + k_2 + k_3 + n_p} \right) \right. \\ & \left. d(G+F)_{pt} + d(G+F)_{nt} + \left( \frac{a_5 + d_f}{a_5 + d_f + n_f + t_f} \right) dG_{pt} \right] + \\ & \left[ \frac{\partial X_c}{\partial r_f} P_c + \frac{\partial P_c}{\partial r_f} X_c + \frac{\partial X_k}{\partial r_f} P_k + \frac{\partial P_k}{\partial r_f} X_k + \frac{\partial \pi_b}{\partial r_f} + \frac{\partial \pi_n}{\partial r_f} + \right. \end{aligned}$$



$$\begin{aligned}
& r_g \frac{\partial G}{\partial r_f} + \frac{\partial r}{\partial r_f} G_p + \frac{\partial r}{\partial r_f} T_p + \frac{\partial T}{\partial r_f} r_t + \frac{\partial r}{\partial r_f} N_p + \frac{\partial N}{\partial r_f} r_n + \\
& F_p + \frac{\partial F}{\partial r_f} r_f - \left( \frac{\partial r_{bf}}{\partial r_f} L_{bf} + \frac{\partial L_{bf}}{\partial r_f} r_{bf} + \frac{\partial r_{nf}}{\partial r_f} L_{nf} + \right. \\
& \left. \frac{\partial L_{nf}}{\partial r_f} r_{nf} \right) \left[ \frac{R \text{ def } T_r}{a_{17} + a_{30}} \left\{ \frac{\mu}{\rho + \gamma + \mu} - (b_{17} + b_{30}) \right. \right. \\
& \left. \left[ \frac{\frac{\rho}{\rho + \gamma + \mu} - \frac{(a_7 + a_{15} + a_{26})}{a_{17} + a_{30}} \left( \frac{\mu}{\rho + \gamma + \mu} \right)}{b_7 + b_{16} + b_{26} - (b_{17} + b_{30})} \right] - \right. \\
& \left. \frac{d_n}{a_{17} + a_{30}} \left\{ b_n - (b_{17} + b_{30}) \right. \right. \\
& \left. \left[ \frac{\frac{b_n (a_7 + a_{15} + a_{26})}{a_{17} + a_{30}} - g_n}{b_7 + b_{15} + b_{26} - (b_{17} + b_{30})} \right] \right\} + \left[ \frac{\partial X_c}{\partial r_g} P_c + \right. \\
& \frac{\partial P_c}{\partial r_g} X_c + \frac{\partial X_k}{\partial r_g} P_k + \frac{\partial P_k}{\partial r_g} X_k + \frac{\partial b}{\partial r_g} + G_p + \frac{\partial G}{\partial r_g} r_g + \\
& \frac{\partial r_t}{\partial r_g} T_p + \frac{\partial T}{\partial r_g} r_t + \frac{\partial r_n}{\partial r_g} N_p + \frac{\partial N}{\partial r_g} r_n + \frac{\partial r_f}{\partial r_g} F_p + \frac{\partial F}{\partial r_g} r_f \\
& \left. - \left( \frac{\partial r_{bf}}{\partial r_g} L_{bf} + \frac{\partial L_{bf}}{\partial r_g} r_{bf} + \frac{\partial r_{nf}}{\partial r_g} L_{nf} + \frac{\partial L_{nf}}{\partial r_g} r_{nf} \right) \right] \\
& R \text{ def } T_r \left\{ \frac{\rho}{\rho + \gamma + \mu} - \frac{(a_7 + a_{15} + a_{26})}{a_{17} + a_{30}} \right. \\
& \left. \left( \frac{\mu}{\rho + \gamma + \mu} \right) \right\} + dN \left\{ b_n \left( \frac{a_7 + a_{15} + a_{26}}{a_{17} + a_{30}} \right) \right. \\
& \left. - g_n \right\} \left[ \frac{\frac{(a_7 + a_{15} + a_{26})}{a_{17} + a_{30}} (b_{17} + b_{30})}{b_7 + b_{15} + b_{26} - \frac{(a_7 + a_{15} + a_{26})}{a_{17} + a_{30}} (b_{17} + b_{30})} \right] \quad (4.4-7)
\end{aligned}$$

The complexity of this equation speaks for itself. It clearly illustrates, however, the pervasive influence of the changes in  $M$ ,  $r_f$  and  $r_g$  associated with (in this case) a change in the reserve requirement.

It should be noted at this point that the relations 4.4-3 through 4.4-6 actually understate the effects of  $dr$  and  $G^*$  on the pertinent variables in the model. The basic reason for this is that they ignore such things as (for example) the impact on prices and outputs of changes in the other rates of interest (other than  $r_g$  and  $r_f$ ) induced by changes in  $M$ ,  $r_f$  and  $r_g$ . Furthermore, the change in  $Y$  itself will induce another round of changes in  $M$  and the other variables in the model. These second, third, and higher generation changes are not contained in 4.4-3 through 4.4-6. This does not mean that their impacts cannot be measured (although it is a nasty, messy job). For example, consider the effects of the original changes in  $Y$ ,  $dY_r$ ;  $r_g$ ,  $dr_{gr}$ ; and  $r_f$ ,  $dr_{fr}$  on the money stock. The 'second-generation' change in  $M$  is given by

$$dM_{r2} = \frac{\partial M}{\partial Y} dY_r + \frac{\partial M}{\partial r_f} dr_{fr} + \frac{\partial M}{\partial r_g} dr_{gr} + \frac{\partial M}{\partial r} \frac{\partial \bar{r}}{\partial M} dM_r + \quad (4.4-8)$$

$$\frac{\partial M}{\partial r} \frac{\partial \bar{r}}{\partial r_f} dr_f + \frac{\partial M}{\partial r} \frac{\partial \bar{r}}{\partial r_g} dr_{gr}$$

where the last two terms reflect the impact of changes in other rates on  $M$  induced by changes in  $r_g$  and  $r_f$ , while the third from last term captures the effects of changes in  $M$  on  $M$ . To answer the question of the total size of the second and higher generation effects, one would have to again resort to finding the general terms for several infinite

series and then testing these series for convergence. This has not been done, primarily because the model has, hopefully, been formulated in such a way that the majority of the impact on the economy is captured by the relations 4.4-3 through 4.4-6.

## CHAPTER V. CONCLUSIONS

## The Monetary Mechanism

By the term "monetary mechanism" we mean the complex web of causal relations through which interest rates, prices, and real phenomena react to determine the money stock as well as the chain of causality running in the opposite direction--the impact of the stock of money on the real and financial variables of the economy. The model constructed in Chapter II has enabled us to examine both of these facets of the monetary mechanism.

Based on our identity for the money stock (see Equation 3.1-3) we derived expressions for the rates of change in M with respect to the key variables of the model. These expressions were of the form

$$\frac{\partial M}{\partial Z} = C_1 \frac{\partial (PX)}{\partial Z} + C_2 \frac{\partial Y}{\partial Z} + C_3 \frac{\partial \bar{r}_f}{\partial Z} + C_4 \frac{\partial \bar{r}_p}{\partial Z} + C_5 \frac{\partial \bar{r}_n}{\partial Z} \quad (5.1-1)$$

where Z is any interest rate, price, real output, or income. From 5.1-1 we conclude that a change in any of these variables affects the stock of money through its impact on prices (P), real output (X), income (Y), and the various rates of interest. The terms  $C_1$  through  $C_5$  are in a sense "money multipliers." They tell us by how much the money stock changes given a change in the variables with which they are associated. (See Tables 3 through 7 and the associated discussion for a complete description and interpretation of these terms.) We have thus developed a specific money multiplier for each of the key variables in the model. The Brunner-Meltzer and Teigen models develop

only a single money multiplier while the C's are only some of several "multipliers" we have developed. (Other multipliers include the Q's developed in our analysis of the effects of changes in reserve requirements and open market operations.)

The next step in the analysis of this facet of the monetary mechanism was an exploration of the specific terms on the right-hand side of 5.1-1. We showed how each of these terms could be derived and upon what variables they depend. The thirteen equations of the form 5.1-1 coupled with the description of the terms on the right-hand sides of these equations provided in Chapter III constitute a complete description of the facet of the monetary mechanism where the chain of causality runs from the variables of the economy to the stock of money.

Due to the general equilibrium nature of our approach and the addition of more sectors and variables we are able to provide a greater wealth of detail and a more comprehensive description of how the money stock reacts to changes in the economy than any of the other extant studies of the money supply. We have spelled out the specific behavioral functions and built from these whereas the other studies only indicate somewhat fuzzily upon what variables the terms in their money supply functions depend.<sup>1</sup>

---

<sup>1</sup> de Leeuw's model is exempt from most of this criticism, since it is a simultaneous model built on specific behavioral equations.

The major advance provided by this portion of our study is the explicit demonstration of the links between the variables in the model and the money stock. We have clearly displayed these links rather than hiding the guts of this portion of the monetary mechanism behind highly simplified identities for the money stock of the sort developed by Friedman and Schwartz, Brunner and Meltzer and Teigen or behind a logically inconsistent equation as developed by de Leeuw.

Our addition of an examination of the links running from the money stock to the variables of the model represents an important advance over extant studies. We have described and analyzed expressions for  $\frac{\partial Z}{\partial M}$ <sup>1</sup> where Z again is any variable (price, interest rate, income, output) in the model. This analysis serves the extremely useful purpose of persuading us that a study of the monetary mechanism is important since changes in M will impact on the real and financial variables of the economy. We have shown that the impact of M on real outputs operates through the effects of changes in M on income, prices, and interest rates, thus affecting both the demand and supply of goods. Even if we assume that all demand functions are homogeneous of degree zero in all their arguments (which we have not done), a change in the money stock will result in a shift in demands, since the change in M will not, in general, produce equi-proportional changes in the P's,

---

<sup>1</sup>One serendipitous feature of our analysis was a different proof of the quantity theory and a demonstration that interest rate effects on demand and supply may weaken the direct relation between money and prices (see Chapter III, pp.86-119) and the importance of downward sloping demand curves for the quantity theory to hold.

Y's, and r's. The same argument can be made with regard to shifts in supply. Thus, the only circumstances in which the  $\frac{\partial X}{\partial M}$  's will be zero is if the shifts in supply and demand exactly balance each other out. There is no reason to suppose that this in general will be the case.

### The Tools of Monetary Policy

The model was used to analyze the effects and the effectiveness of the major tools of monetary policy--open market operations, changes in the reserve requirements, and changes in the rediscount rate--in combating both inflation and unemployment.

Changes in the rediscount rate were found to be almost completely ineffective in combating problems of unemployment (characterized by an excess supply of bank loans from unborrowed reserves). It was only somewhat effective in helping to solve problems of inflation (when there is likely to be an excess demand for bank loans). In these situations changes in the rediscount rate affect the amount of rediscounting and thus the actual amount of loans made by the bank. Changes in the amounts of bank loans made potentially change the demand for the consumer and capital good, thus impacting upon the level of economic activity. The implication of these conclusions is to cast more doubt on the usefulness of discretionary changes in the rediscount rate as a monetary tool, especially in combating problems of unemployment.

The effects of open market operations and changes in the reserve requirement on the variables of the model were a result of their

primary effect on the money stock, the rate on government securities, and the rate on firms' securities. Their effectiveness in combating inflation depends on the size of

$$\left( \frac{\partial P_k}{\partial M} + \frac{\partial P_c}{\partial M} \right) dM + \left( \frac{\partial P_k}{\partial r_g} + \frac{\partial P_c}{\partial r_g} \right) dr_g + \left( \frac{\partial P_k}{\partial r_f} + \frac{\partial P_c}{\partial r_f} \right) dr_f . \quad (5.2-1)$$

Their effectiveness in combating unemployment depends on the size of

$$\left( \frac{\partial X_k}{\partial M} + \frac{\partial X_c}{\partial M} \right) dM + \left( \frac{\partial X_k}{\partial r_g} + \frac{\partial X_c}{\partial r_g} \right) dr_g + \left( \frac{\partial X_k}{\partial r_f} + \frac{\partial X_c}{\partial r_f} \right) dr_f , \quad (5.2-2)$$

where the differentials refer to the changes in  $M$ ,  $r_g$ , and  $r_f$  caused by either of the two monetary tools. The sizes of the partial derivatives are independent of the particular monetary tool used, consequently one tool can accomplish the same results as the other.

The major differences between the two tools were found to be:

1. Open market operations cause an immediate change in the total size of the private sectors asset portfolio by changing the total amount of government securities held by the private sectors while changes in the reserve requirement, while indirectly changing the size of the private asset portfolio (through its impact on  $C$ ,  $D$ , and  $T$ ), does not have this direct effect.



2. Changes in the reserve requirement change the quantity of bank loans supplied per dollar of deposits while open market operations lack this effect.

As a result of these major differences we found that, given an open market operation and a change in the reserve requirement that produce the same total change in the reserves of the banking system, the open market operation has a greater impact on both the money stock and on the rate on government securities.<sup>1</sup> We also developed a way of finding combinations of open market operations and changes in the reserve requirement that produce the same change in total reserves. This formulation added to our belief that changes in reserve requirements are an extremely powerful tool of monetary policy because of the very large open market operation that would have to be undertaken to produce the same effects as the change in the reserve requirement.

#### Suggested Empirical Testing Procedure

Empirical testing of the model and its conclusions will be centered about the estimation of the elements of the vectors  $A_i$ ,  $i = 1, 2, \dots, 30$  and the other parameters of the model. Once estimates for these parameters are obtained, numerical estimates of the various multipliers can be obtained.

---

<sup>1</sup>This conclusion on interest rate effects seems to contradict the findings of Ascheim (2). He found that given an equal reduction in demand deposits, a higher reserve requirement would produce a greater increase in interest rates than a restrictive open market operation. It is not clear that his analysis, framed in terms of equal changes in demand deposits, and ours in terms of equal changes in reserves are directly comparable.

The second level of testing will center about estimation of the accuracy of the rates of change and total changes predicted by the model. How do our predictions "fit" with changes in M and other variables actually observed?

It is felt that regression analysis and one and two stage least squares should comprise the bulk of the statistical techniques to be used. The data to which the model will be fit will be that used by the Brookings-SSRC model.

Completion of this portion of the work will provide an empirical judgment of the conclusions of the work which, to this point, are based strictly on theory and a few assumptions about the signs, but not the magnitudes, of the parameters of the model.

## ACKNOWLEDGEMENTS

I should like to express my appreciation to the National Science Foundation for providing funds to support this work and to Iowa State University for actually allocating the funds under the NSF grant.

I am also deeply indebted to Professor Dudley G. Lockett for his guidance throughout the course of the project. Special thanks go to my wife for her cheerful suffering of the effects of my frustrations.

## BIBLIOGRAPHY

1. Angell, J. The behavior of money; exploratory studies. New York, New York, McGraw-Hill Book Co., Inc. 1936.
2. Ascheim, J. Restrictive open market operations versus reserve requirement increases: a reformulation. *Economic Journal* 73: 254-266. 1963.
3. Baumol, W. The transactions demand for cash: an inventory theoretic approach. *Quarterly Journal of Economics* 66:545-556. 1952.
4. Brunner, K. A schema for the supply theory of money. *International Economic Review* 2:77-88. 1961.
5. \_\_\_\_\_. Some major problems in monetary theory. *American Economic Review* 51:381-397. 1961.
6. \_\_\_\_\_ and Meltzer, A. An alternative approach to the monetary mechanism. Washington, D. C., U. S. Gov't. Print. Office. 1964.
7. \_\_\_\_\_ and \_\_\_\_\_. Predicting velocity: implications for theory and policy. *Journal of Finance* 18:319-354. 1963.
8. \_\_\_\_\_ and \_\_\_\_\_. Some further investigation of the demand and supply functions of money. *Journal of Finance* 19:321-359. 1964.
9. Cagan, P. The demand for currency relative to the total money supply. *Journal of Political Economy* 66:303-328. 1958.
10. \_\_\_\_\_. Determinants and effects of changes in the stock of money, 1875-1960. Washington, D. C., National Bureau of Economic Research. 1965.
11. Chase, S. and Gramley, L. Time deposits in monetary analysis. Washington, D. C., Federal Reserve Bulletin 51:1380-1406. 1965.
12. Curry, L. The supply and control of money in the U. S. Cambridge, Mass., The Harvard Press. 1934.
13. Davidson, Paul. Money, portfolio balance, capital accumulation, and economic growth. *Econometrica* 36:291-321. 1968.
14. \_\_\_\_\_ and Smolensky, E. Modigliani on the interaction of real and monetary phenomena. *Review of Economics and Statistics* 46:429-431. 1964.
15. Davis, R. G. Open market operations, interest rates, and deposit growth. *Quarterly Journal of Economics* 79:431-454. 1965.

16. de Leeuw, F. A model of financial behavior. In Duesenberry, J., Fromm, G., Klein, L., Kuh, E., ed. The Brookings Quarterly Economic Model of the U. S. pp. 465-528. Chicago, Illinois, Rand-McNally. 1965.
17. Dewald, W. Free reserves, total reserves and monetary control. Journal of Political Economy 71:141-153. 1963.
18. \_\_\_\_\_. Money supply vs. interest rates as a proximate objectives of monetary policy. Washington, D. C., National Bureau of Economic Research. 1966.
19. Fand, D. Some implications of money supply analysis. American Economic Review 57:380-400. 1967.
20. Feige, E. The demand for liquid assets: a temporal cross section analysis. Englewood Cliffs, New Jersey, Prentice-Hall. 1964.
21. Fisher, I. The theory of interest. New York, New York, Augustus M. Kelley. 1965.
22. Friedman, M. The demand for money, some theoretical and empirical results. Journal of Political Economy 67:327-351. 1959.
23. \_\_\_\_\_. The lag effect of monetary policy. Journal of Political Economy 69:447-466. 1961.
24. \_\_\_\_\_ and Schwartz, A. A monetary history of the U. S., 1867-1960. Princeton, New Jersey, The Princeton University Press. 1963.
25. Goldfeld, S. Commercial bank behavior and economic activity; a structural study of monetary policy in the postwar U.S. Amsterdam, North Holland Pub. Co. 1966.
26. Goldsmith, A. Financial intermediaries in the American economy since 1900. Princeton, New Jersey, Princeton University Press. 1964.
27. Grambley, L. and Chase, S. Time deposits in monetary analysis. Federal Reserve Bulletin 51:1380-1406. 1965.
28. Gurley, J. and Shaw, E. Money in a theory of finance. Washington, D. C., The Brookings Institution. 1960.
29. Horwich, G. Elements of timing and response in the balance sheet of banking. Journal of Finance 12:310-344. 1957.
30. Johansen, L. The role of the banking system in a macroeconomic model. International Economic Papers 8:91-110. 1958.

31. Keynes, J. A tract of monetary reform. London, Macmillan and Co. 1923.
32. \_\_\_\_\_. A treatise on money. New York, New York, Harcourt, Brace and Co. 1930.
33. Klein, L. and Goldberger, A. An econometric model of the United States, 1929-1952. Amsterdam, North-Holland Pub. Co. 1955.
34. Kuh, E. The validity of cross-sectionally estimated behavior equations in time series applications. *Econometrica* 27:197-214. 1959.
35. Lavington, F. The English capital market. Second ed. London, Methuen and Co., Ltd. 1929.
36. Lindbeck, A. A study of monetary analysis. Stockholm, Almqvist and Wikesell. 1963.
37. Lydall, H. Income, assets and the demand for money. *Review of Economics and Statistics* 40:1-14. 1958.
38. Maddala, G. and Vogel, R. The demand for money, a cross-section study of business firms: comment. *Quarterly Journal of Economics* 79:153-159. 1965.
39. Meade, J. The amount of money and the banking system. *Economic Journal* 64:77-83. 1934.
40. Meigs, A. Free reserves and the money supply. Chicago, Illinois, The University of Chicago Press. 1962.
41. Meltzer, A. The behavior of the French money supply. *Journal of Political Economy* 67:275-296. 1959.
42. \_\_\_\_\_. The demand for money: a cross-section study of business firms. *Quarterly Journal of Economics* 77:405-422. 1963.
43. Miller, M. and Orr, D. A model of the demand for money by firms. *Quarterly Journal of Economics* 80:413-435. 1966.
44. Modigliani, F. The monetary mechanism and its interaction with real phenomena. Washington, D. C., National Bureau of Economic Research. 1963.
45. Morrison, G. Liquidity preferences of commercial banks. Chicago, Illinois, The University of Chicago Press. 1966.
46. Orr, D. and Mellon, W. Stochastic reserve losses and expansion of bank credit. *American Economic Review* 51:614-623. 1961.

47. Patinkin, D. Money, interest and prices. Second ed. New York, New York, Harper and Row. 1965.
48. Phillips, C. A. Bank Credit. New York, New York, Macmillan and Co. 1921.
49. Polak, J. and White, W. The effect of income expansion on the quantity of money. International Monetary Fund Staff Papers 4: 327-352. 1954-1955.
50. Riefler, W. Money rates and money markets in the U. S. New York, New York, Harper and Bros. 1930.
51. Teigen, R. Demand and supply functions of money in the U. S.: some structural estimates. Econometrica 32:476-509. 1964.
52. Tobin, J. Commercial banks as creators of money. Banking and Monetary Studies. Homewood, Illinois, Richard D. Irwin and Co., Inc. 1963.
53. \_\_\_\_\_. Money and economic growth. Econometrica 33:671-684. 1965.
54. \_\_\_\_\_ and Brainard, W. Financial intermediaries and the effectiveness of monetary controls. American Economic Review 53:383-400. 1963.
55. Vogel, R. and Maddala, G. Cross-section estimates of liquid asset demand by manufacturing corporations. Journal of Finance 22:557-576. 1967.
56. Warburton, C. Monetary velocity and monetary policy. Review of Economics and Statistics 30:304-313. 1948.
57. Whalen, E. A cross-section study of business demand for cash. Journal of Finance 20:423-443. 1965.

## APPENDIX

The following is a list of the major symbols used in the model and their definitions:

$r$  = the reserve requirement on demand and time deposits;

$r_f$  = the rate of interest on firm's securities;

$r_g$  = the rate of interest on government securities;

$r_n$  = the rate of interest on deposits in intermediaries;

$r_t$  = the rate of interest on time deposits;

$r_{bf}$  = the rate of interest on bank loans to firms;

$r_{bp}$  = the rate of interest on bank loans to the public;

$r_{nf}$  = the rate of interest on intermediary loans to firms;

$r_{np}$  = the rate of interest on intermediary loans to the public;

$r_d$  = the rediscount rate;

$\bar{r}_g$  = the coupon rate on government securities;

$\bar{r}_f = (r_f, r_g, r_n, r_t, r_{bf}, 0, r_{nf}, 0);$

$\bar{r}_b = (r_f, r_g, 0, r_t, r_{bf}, r_{bp}, 0, 0);$

$\bar{r}_n = (r_f, r_g, r_n, r_t, 0, 0, r_{nf}, r_{np});$

$\bar{r}_p = (r_f, r_g, r_n, r_t, 0, r_{bp}, 0, r_{np});$

$dr$  = a policy determined change in reserve requirements;

$A_i = (i = 1, 2, \dots, 30) = \text{column vector of constants}$   
 $= (a_i, b_i, c_i, d_i, e_i, f_i, g_i, h_i);$

$A_f = \text{vector of firms assets};$

$C = \text{currency};$

$D = \text{demand deposits};$

$D_k = \text{stock demand for capital};$



$dK$  = flow demand for capital;

$D_\ell$  = demand for labor;

$DA^D$  = desired distribution of firms' financial assets;

$DE^D$  = desired distribution of firms' retained earnings;

$d$  = actual amount of rediscounting;

$d^d$  = amount of rediscounting demanded;

$d_o^d$  = amount of rediscounting demanded to meet public's demand for loans;

$d_1^d$  = amount of rediscounting demanded to meet firm's demand for loans;

$dZ_f$  = change in asset Z resulting from a change in the banks' holdings of government securities;

$dZ_g$  = change in asset Z resulting from a change in the banks' holdings of government securities;

$dZ_{kl}$  = change in sector k's holdings of asset Z resulting from a change in sector k's holdings of asset l;

$dZ_T$  = total change in asset Z;

$dZ_{Tr}$  = total change in asset Z resulting from a change in reserve requirements;

$dZ_{TG}^*$  = total change in asset Z resulting from an open market operation;

$dM_{Tr}$  = total change in the money stock resulting from a change in reserve requirements;

$dM_{TG}^*$  = total change in the money stock resulting from an open market operation;

$dr_{xr}$  = change in interest rate  $r_x$  resulting from a change in reserve requirements;

$dr_{xG}^*$  = change in interest rate  $r_x$  resulting from an open market operation;

$E^a$  = actual stock of firms' retained earnings;

$E^d$  = desired stock of firms' retained earnings;

$F$  = firms' debt instruments (securities);

$F^d$  = firms' demand for financing;

$F^S$  = firms' supply of new securities;

$G$  = government securities;

$G^*$  = an open market operation;

$\bar{G}$  = full value of government securities held by the private sectors;

$G^S$  = supply of government securities;

$G^D$  = demand for government securities;

$I_g$  = gross investment;

$I_n$  = net investment;

$K$  = capital stock;

$k$  = rate of growth of the capital stock;

$L$  = amount of labor in the economy;

$L_c$  = amount of labor used to produce the consumer good;

$L_k$  = amount of labor used to produce the capital good;

$L^b$  = total bank loans;

$L^n$  = total intermediary loans;

$L_p$  = total loans to the public;

$L_f$  = total loans to the firms;

$L_p^b$  = bank loans to the public;

$L_f^b$  = bank loans to the firms;

$L_p^n$  = intermediary loans to the public;

$L_f^n$  = intermediary loans to the firms;

$L_f^D$  = firms aggregate demand for loans;

$L_f^{Db}$  = firms demand for bank loans;

$L_f^{Dn}$  = firms demand for intermediary loans;

$L_p^D$  = public's aggregate demand for loans;

$L_p^{Db}$  = public's demand for bank loans;

$L_p^{Dn}$  = public's demand for intermediary loans;

$L^{Sb}$  = banks' loan supply from unborrowed reserves;

$L_p^{Sb}$  = amount banks are willing to loan the public from unborrowed reserves;

$L_f^{Sb}$  = amount banks are willing to loan the firms from unborrowed reserves;

$L^{Sn}$  = aggregate amount intermediaries are willing to lend;

$L_p^{Sn}$  = aggregate amount intermediaries are willing to lend the public;

$L_f^{Sn}$  = aggregate amount intermediaries are willing to lend the firms;

$M$  = the money stock;

$m$  = the number of consumer good firms;

$N$  = deposits in intermediaries;

$n$  = the number of capital good firms;

$P_c$  = the price of the consumer good;

$P_k$  = the price of the capital;

$PX = (P_c X_c + P_k X_k)$ ;

$Q_G^*$  = the ratio of successive reserve changes resulting from an open market operation;

$Q_r$  = the ratio of successive reserve changes resulting from a change in reserve requirements;

$R$  = required reserves;

$R^S$  = secondary reserves;

$R \text{ def}$  = reserve deficiency;

$R \text{ def}_T$  = total reserve deficiency;

$S^k$  = stock supply of capital;

$S^l$  = supply of labor;

$s^k$  = flow supply of capital;

$T$  = time deposits;

$T_r$  = tax receipts;

$t$  = marginal rate of taxation;

$X_b$  = the consumer good;

$X_k$  = the capital good;

$X_{kc}$  = amount of the capital good used in the production of the consumer good;

$X_{kk}$  = amount of the capital good used in the production of capital;

$Y$  = public's disposable money income;

$\bar{Y}$  = gross money income;

$Y_b$  = banks' contribution to income;

$Y_f$  = firms' contribution to income;

$Y_n$  = intermediaries contribution to income;

$Y_g$  = government's contribution to income;

$\alpha$  = rate of depreciation;

$\alpha_c, \alpha_k = X_k$  and  $X_c$  intercepts of the transformation curve;

$\lambda$  = rate of growth of the labor force;

$\emptyset$  = profit expectation function for the firms;

$\pi_b$  = total banks' profits;

$\pi_{lb}$  = banks' profit from loans;

$\pi_{gb}$  = banks' profit from government securities;

$\pi_{fb}$  = banks' profit from firms' securities;

$\pi_n$  = total intermediaries' profit;

$\pi_{ln}$  = intermediaries' profit from loans;

$\pi_{gn}$  = intermediaries' profit from government securities;

$\pi_{fn}$  = intermediaries' profit from firms' securities.

Any Greek letter or lower case English letter not listed above (with or without subscripts) represents a parameter in a decision function for a particular sector.